This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

+ *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.

+ *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.

+ *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.

+ *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at `http://books.google.com/`

BELL'S READING-BOOKS

MASTERMAN READY

—

MARRYAT

PRICE ONE SHILLING & SIXPENCE

Digitized by Google

BELL'S READING-BOOKS

FOR SCHOOLS AND PAROCHIAL LIBRARIES.

THE popularity which the Series of Reading-Books known as 'Books for Young Readers' has attained is a sufficient proof that teachers and pupils alike approve of the use of interesting stories with a simple plot in place of the dry combinations of letters and syllables, making no impression on the mind, of which elementary reading-books generally consist. There is also practical testimony to the fact that children acquire the power of reading much more rapidly when the process involves something more than the mere mechanical exercise of the faculties of sight and memory.

The publishers have therefore thought it advisable to extend the application of this principle to books adapted for more advanced readers; and to issue for general use in schools a series of popular works which they venture to think will in practice be found more adapted for the end in view than the collections of miscellaneous and often uninteresting extracts which are generally made to serve the purpose.

These volumes will be printed in legible type, and strongly bound in cloth, and will be sold at 1*s.* or 1*s.* 6*d.* each, post 8vo.

Now ready:—

MASTERMAN READY. By CAPTAIN MARRYAT, post 8vo, 1*s.* 6*d.*

PARABLES FROM NATURE. By MRS GATTY, foolscap 8vo, 1*s.*

The following are in preparation:—

ROBINSON CRUSOE.
OUR VILLAGE. By MISS MITFORD (selections).
GRIMM'S GERMAN TALES. „
ANDERSEN'S DANISH TALES. „
FRIENDS IN FUR AND FEATHERS. „

LONDON: GEORGE BELL & SONS, YORK STREET, COVENT GARDEN.

Digitized by Google

BELL'S BOOKS FOR YOUNG READERS.

A SERIES OF READING-BOOKS DESIGNED TO FACILITATE THE ACQUISITION OF THE POWER OF READING BY VERY YOUNG CHILDREN.

The special feature of these books is that, even from the most elementary grade, they possess the interest which a connected narrative, however simple in wording, seldom fails to excite; and by this means make the reading-lesson a pleasure instead of a dull piece of routine, and actually encourage the pupils to prolong it, or to practice the newly-acquired faculty at home.

The first Part consists of four stories written entirely in easy words of one, two, or three letters. The second contains words of four letters, and of less simple pronunciation; and so on throughout eight different volumes, carefully graduated, so that the pupil, by almost imperceptible degrees, learns to read with ordinary facility.

The Parts are issued in cloth binding of a distinct colour for each, with cut edges, price 8*d.* each.

Part I. contains — THE CAT AND THE HEN. A CAT IN A BAG. SAM AND HIS DOG RED LEG. BOB AND TOM LEE.

Part II.—THE NEW BORN LAMB. THE GOOD BOY, BAD BOY, AND NICE WISE GIRL. BAD BEN AND OLD SAM SLY. POOR FAN.

Part III.—THE BLIND BOY. THE MUTE GIRL. A NEW TALE OF BABES IN A WOOD.

Part IV.—A NIGHT AND A DAY, OR THE DEY AND THE KNIGHT. THE NEW BANK NOTE. THE ROYAL VISIT. A KING'S WALK ON A WINTER'S DAY.

Part V.—STORY OF A CAT. TOLD BY HERSELF.

Part VI.—THE STORY OF THREE MONKEYS.

Part VII.—QUEEN BEE AND BUSY BEE.

Part VIII.—GULL'S CRAG.

Also in neat cloth, gilt lettered, price 1*s. each, as Prizes.*

LONDON: GEORGE BELL & SONS, YORK STREET, COVENT GARDEN.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

MASTERMAN READY;

OR,

The Wreck of the Pacific.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

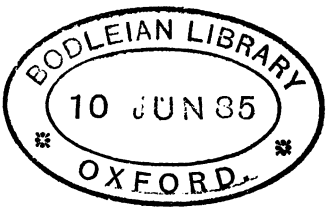
BELL'S READING BOOKS.

MASTERMAN READY:

OR,

THE WRECK OF THE PACIFIC.

By CAPTAIN MARRYAT, R.N.



LONDON:
GEORGE BELL AND SONS, YORK STREET,
COVENT GARDEN.

1875.

253. f. 18.

Digitized by Google

THIS volume is condensed from the larger edition in order to bring it within the price fitting it for use in schools as a reading-book, or for parochial libraries.

Digitized by Google

CONTENTS.

CHAP.		PAGE
I.	Ship before the Wind--Stormy Petrels—Robinson Crusoe—Description of the Ship and her Crew	1
II.	Some Account of William and his Parents—A Calm—Accidents during the Gale—Poor Juno	4
III.	Ship in Table Bay — Table Mountain — Going on Shore—Botanic Gardens—Den of Lions—Tommy in danger, and very much frightened—Return on Board	6
IV.	Albatross—Wonderful Provision of Nature—Symptoms of a Storm — Preparations for a Storm — Dreadful Storm—Struck by Lightning—Terrible Wreck and Loss of Life ...	9
V.	Sailors never discouraged—Anxiety of the Captain—Storm renewed—Pride of Man humbled—Seamen never at a loss—Uncertainty of Life	13
VI.	Confusion in the Cabin—Captain struck senseless—Symptoms of Insubordination — Mackintosh's Advice — Preparations for quitting Ship—Distress of Mr Seagrave—Noble Conduct of Ready—Departure of the Crew	15
VII.	Mr Seagrave comforted by Ready—Exertions of William and Ready—Signs of Land—Gloomy Prospects—Hope somewhat restored—Discovery of Land—Steer for Land—Ship on Coral Rocks	19
VIII.	Alarm of Mrs Seagrave — Resources enumerated by Ready—Mr Seagrave repines—Inventory of Live Stock—Preparations for Landing	24
IX.	Getting out the Boat — Mr Seagrave and Ready land — Return on Board—Removal to the Island—Erection of a Tent—Ready returns to the Ship	26

Digitized by Google

CHAP.		PAGE
X.	Tommy mounts Guard—Removal of Mrs Seagrave—Arrival at the Tent—Exhaustion of Ready	30
XI.	Beauty of the Scenery—How to produce Fire—Return to the Vessel — Unloading the Vessel — Preparation for Breakfast	32
XII.	Ready taken by surprise—Assembled at Breakfast—Danger of Sharks—Landing useful Articles—Pig and Shark—Wise Precaution—Prognostics of the Weather—Maternal Affection	34
XIII.	Mrs Seagrave's Anxiety—Ready's Disinterestedness—Preparations for the Journey—Tommy at the Grindstone ...	37
XIV.	Commencement of Journey—Novel Way-marks—Anxiety about Water—Advantage of Experience—Sudden Alarm —Prepare for the Worst—Breakfast—Change of Scene —They discover the Sea	39
XV.	A beautiful Scene—Dinner—Sea Anemones—A Turtle—An important Discovery—The Hour of Rest	42
XVI.	Search for Water—Sagacity of Dogs—Water discovered—Site for a new House—Return to the Cove	45
XVII.	Symptoms of an approaching Storm—Hauling up the Boat —Threatening Appearances—All prepared for the Worst	47
XVIII.	Tents blown down — Morning after the Storm — Ready's Plans for the Day	49
XIX.	Collecting the Stores—Cow devoured by Sharks—Abundance of Water — Coral Insects—Formation and growth of Coral Rocks	50
XX.	Preparations for Removing—A Trip in the Boat—Visit to the Spring	53
XXI.	Arrival of William and Juno—Anticipations of the Future —Ready's Age and Habits—Arrangements for Cooking —Ready finds a Turtle	54
XXII.	The Tents taken down—Depart for the new Residence—Arrival of Mrs Seagrave—Dine off Turtle-soup	56
XXIII.	Sinking a Well—Preparations for Dinner—Ready uses the Gimlet—Making the Well—Sinking the Cask	59
XXIV	Plan of Operations — Trees to be cut down — Spot for a Turtle-pond and a Garden—Juno and William at work	60

Digitized by Google

CHAP.		PAGE
XXV.	Ready's Plans as to the future Garden	62
XXVI.	Tommy makes a Garden, and gets some useful Advice —Cocoa-nuts—Progress of Operations—Turtle-pond	63
XXVII.	Turning a Turtle—On Fishing—Pond finished ...	65
XXVIII.	Preparing for Fishing—Fishing—Fortunate Escape—Ready reproves William—William's Fish—Felling Cocoa-nut Trees	67
XXIX.	Building the House—House finished—Rain sets in ...	70
XXX.	Juno and Ready—Going the Rounds—The Boat drifted —Sheep and Goats—The Kids—Council held—Boat to be secured—Arrangements—Go to work ...	71
XXXI.	Boat secured—Fishing—Storm—Arranging House—Ready's History—To bed	74
XXXII.	Finds the Fowls—Fowl-house—Ready's History ...	78
XXXIII.	Speculations—Commence Out-house—Ready's History	81
XXXIV.	House struck with Lightning—Juno stunned—Goat killed—Lightning Conductor—Ready's Narrative ...	85
XXXV.	Building Store-house—On the Beach—Christianity ...	90
XXXVI.	Fuel-stack—Stack complete—Salt-pan—Ready's History	92
XXXVII.	Fish-pond—Wheeling Stones—Alligator—Pigs—Dogs —Ready's Narrative	96
XXXVIII.	William taken ill—Ready bleeds him—William in a Fever—Out of Danger—Recovering—Ready's Narrative	101
XXXIX.	Ready's Narrative	108
XL.	Ready's Narrative	111
XLI.	Survey agreed upon — Remarks of Ready — Ready's Narrative concluded	115
XLII.	Set off on Survey—Through the Wood—Clearing the Wood — Dinner — Discovery — Banana — Pepper — Prickly Pear—Guava—Parrots—Sea-birds' Nests—Harbour for Boat—Crayfish and Oysters—Return Home—Hemp	117
XLIII.	Vessel in Sight—William and Ready—The Telescope—Flagstaff—Air Bedding—Preparations—Hoist Ensign and Flag—Hopes and Fears—Joy of the Party—Vessel hauls off—Disappointment	122

Digitized by Google

CHAP.		PAGE
XLIV.	Grief and Despair—Chances—Canoe seen—Island Women—Savages—Women taken to the House—Hopes and Fears—Indian Women escape—Council held—Plans proposed	127
XLV.	Indecision—Consultation	131
XLVI.	Passage through the Reef—Looking for Harbour ...	133
XLVII.	Going round to the Harbour—Banana Clump—Digging for Water—Tents pitched—Return to Bay	135
XLVIII.	Arrival at Tents—New Location—Arrangements ...	137
XLIX.	Fencing the Yams—Departure for Cove—Examine Beach	138
L.	Examination of Stores—Books	140
LI.	Stores examined—Pig killed—Fish caught	142
LII.	Preparations—Departure—Chickens—Carrying Stores—The Letter—Nails and Cases	144
LIII.	Dog returns—Letter answered—Return to Tents—Stores removed—Last Trip—Arrival at Harbour	146
LIV.	Sunday—Return to Bay—Stockade commenced—Arrangements—Look-out	149
LV.	Tommy missing—Ready in the Water—Ready's Danger—Boat sinking—Ready and Tommy saved	152
LVI.	Stockade complete—House finished—Water-cask—Consultation—Go into Stockade—Arrangements—Turn Turtle	154
LVII.	Washing—Yams—Looking out—Canoes under Sail—Arrangements—Conversation—Mr and Mrs Seagrave ...	158
LVIII.	Preparations—All prepared—Savages land—Retreat to Stockade	161
LIX.	Savages approach—Attack—Retire—Council of Savages—Water all gone—Discussion—Want of Water ...	162
LX.	Second Attack—Savages retire—Proposed Defence—Thirst increases—Discussion—Thoughts—Conversation—Look-out	165
LXI.	Consultation — Extreme Thirst — Ready's Proposal — Ready's Attempt—Ready wounded—Water supplied	168
LXII.	Ready's Wound—Mrs Seagrave—Ready and William—The Look-out—Attack of Stockade—Relief at hand—Captain Osborn arrives	171
LXIII.	Explanation—Ready dying—Ready's Death—Regret—Arrangements	174
LXIV.	Ready's Funeral—Love for the Island—Schooner sails—Arrival at Sydney—Seagrave Family	178

Digitized by Google

MASTERMAN READY;

OR,

THE WRECK OF THE PACIFIC.

CHAPTER I.

It was in the month of October, 18—, that the Pacific, a large ship, was running before a heavy gale of wind in the middle of the vast Atlantic Ocean. She had but little sail, for the wind was so strong that the canvas would have been split into pieces by the furious blasts before which she was driven through the waves, which were very high, and following her almost as fast as she darted through their boiling waters; sometimes heaving up her stern and sinking her bows down so deep into the hollow of the sea, that it appeared as if she would have dived down underneath the waves.

The captain stood before the wheel watching the men who were steering the ship; for when you are running before a heavy gale, it requires great attention to the helm: and as he looked around him and up at the heavens, he sung in a low voice the words of a sea song:—

'One wide water all around us,
All above us one black sky.'

And so it was with them;—they were in the middle of the Atlantic, not another vessel to be seen, and the heavens were covered with black clouds, which were borne along furiously by the gale; the sea ran mountains high, and broke into large white foaming crests, while the fierce wind howled through the rigging of the vessel.

Besides the captain of the ship and the two men at the wheel,

Digitized by Google

there were two other personages on deck: one was a young lad about twelve years old, and the other a weather-beaten old seaman, whose grisly locks were streaming in the wind, as he paced aft and looked over the taffrail of the vessel.

The young lad, observing a heavy sea coming up to the stern of the vessel, caught hold of the old man's arm, crying out—'Won't that great wave come into us, Ready?'

'No, Master William, it will not: don't you see how the ship lifts her quarters to it?—and now it has passed underneath us.'

'I don't like the sea much, Ready; I wish we were safe on shore again,' replied the lad. 'Don't the waves look as if they wished to beat the ship all to pieces?'

'Yes; but I am used to them, Master Willy, and with a good ship like this, and a good captain and crew, I don't care for them.'

'But sometimes ships do sink, and then everybody is drowned.'

'Yes, Master William; and very often the very ships sink which those on board think are most safe. We can only do our best, and after that we must submit to the will of Heaven.'

'What little birds are those flying about so close to the water?'

'Those are Mother Carey's chickens, Master William, as we sailors call them. You seldom see them except in a storm, or when a storm is coming on.'

The birds which William referred to were the stormy petrels.

'Were you ever shipwrecked on a desolate island, like Robinson Crusoe?'

'Yes, Master William, I have been shipwrecked; but I never heard of Robinson Crusoe. It's not very likely that I should have known that one man you speak of, out of so many.'

'Oh! but it's all in a book which I have read. I could tell you all about it—and so I will when the ship is quiet again; but now I wish you would help me down below, for I promised mamma not to stay up long.'

'Then always keep your promises like a good lad,' replied the old man; 'now give me your hand, and I'll answer for it that we will fetch the hatchway without a tumble; and when the weather is fine again, I'll tell you how I was wrecked, and you shall tell me all about Robinson Crusoe.'

Digitized by Google

Having seen Master William safe to the cabin door, the old seaman returned to the deck, for it was his watch.

Masterman Ready, for such was his name, had been more than fifty years at sea, having been bound apprentice to a collier which sailed from South Shields, when he was only ten years old. His face was browned from long exposure, and there were deep furrows on his cheeks, but he was still a hale and active man. He had served many years on board of a man-of-war, and had been in every climate: he had many strange stories to tell, and he might be believed even when his stories were strange, for he would not tell an untruth. He could navigate a vessel, and, of course, he could read and write; he had read his Bible over and over again. The name of Ready was very well suited to him, for he was seldom at a loss; and in cases of difficulty and danger, the captain would not hesitate to ask his opinion, and frequently take his advice. He was on board as second mate of the vessel.

The Pacific was, as we have before observed, a very fine ship, and well able to contend with the most violent storm. She was of more than four hundred tons burthen, and was then making a passage out to New South Wales, with a valuable cargo of English hard-ware, cutlery, and other manufactures. The captain was a good navigator and seaman, and moreover a good man; of a cheerful, happy disposition, always making the best of everything, and when accidents did happen, always more inclined to laugh than to look grave. His name was Osborn. The first mate, whose name was Mackintosh, was a Scotchman, rough and ill-tempered, but paying strict attention to his duty—a man that Captain Osborn could trust, but whom he did not like.

Ready we have already spoken of, and it will not be necessary to say anything about the seamen on board, except that there were thirteen of them, hardly a sufficient number to man so large a vessel; but just as they were about to sail, five of the seamen, who did not like the treatment they had received from Mackintosh, the first mate, had left the ship, and Captain Osborn did not choose to wait until he could obtain others in their stead. This proved unfortunate, as the events which we shall hereafter relate will show.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER II.

MASTER WILLIAM, whom we have introduced to the reader, was the eldest boy of a family who were passengers on board, consisting of the father, mother, and four children: his father was a Mr Seagrave, a very well-informed, clever man, who having for many years held an office under government at Sydney, the principal town in New South Wales, was now returning from a leave of absence of three years. His property had been well managed by the person who had charge of it during his absence in England, and he was now taking out with him a variety of articles of every description for its improvement, and for his own use; such as furniture for his house, implements of agriculture, seeds, plants, cattle, and many other things too numerous to mention.

Mrs Seagrave was an amiable woman, but not in very strong health. The family consisted of William, who was the eldest, a clever, steady boy, but, at the same time, full of mirth and humour; Thomas, who was six years old, a very thoughtless but good-tempered boy, full of mischief, and always in a scrape; Caroline, a little girl of seven years; and Albert, a fine strong little fellow, who was not one year old: he was under the charge of a black girl who had come from the Cape of Good Hope to Sydney, and had followed Mrs Seagrave to England. We have now mentioned all the people on board of the Pacific: perhaps we ought not to forget two shepherd's dogs, belonging to Mr Seagrave, and a little terrier, which was a great favourite of Captain Osborn, to whom she belonged. And now we will proceed:—It was not until the fourth day from its commencement that the gale abated, and then it gradually subsided until it was nearly a calm. The men, who had been watching night after night during the gale, now brought all their clothes which had been drenched by the rain and spray, and hung them up in the rigging to dry: the sails also which had been furled, and had been saturated by the wet, were now loosened and spread out, that they might not be mildewed. The wind blew mild and soft, the sea had gone down, and the ship was running through the water at the speed of about four miles an hour. Mrs

Digitized by Google

Seagrave, wrapped up in a cloak, was seated upon one of the arm-chests near the stern of the ship, her husband and children were all with her enjoying the fine weather, when Captain Osborn, who had been taking an observation of the sun with his sextant, came up to them.

'Well, Master Tommy, you are very glad that the gale is over?'

'I didn't care,' replied Tommy, 'only I spilt all my soup. But Juno tumbled off her chair, and rolled away with the baby till papa picked them both up.'

'It was a mercy that poor Albert was not killed,' observed Mrs Seagrave.

'It is 12 o'clock by the sun, sir,' said Mackintosh, the first mate, to the captain.

'Then bring me up the latitude, Mr Mackintosh, while I work out the longitude from the sights which I took this morning. In five minutes, Mr Seagrave, I shall be ready to prick off over our place on the chart.'

'Here are the dogs come up on deck,' said William; 'I dare say they are as glad of the fine weather as we are. Come here, Romulus! Here, Remus!—Remus!'

'I should like to go down now, my dear,' said Mrs Seagrave; 'perhaps Ready will see the baby down safe.'

'That I will, ma'am,' said Ready, putting his quadrant on the capstern: 'now, Juno, give me the child, and go down first;—stern foremost, you stupid girl! how often do I tell you that? Some day or another you will come down with a run.'

'And break my head,' said Juno.

'Yes, or break your arm; and then who is to hold the child?'

As soon as they were all down in the cabin, the captain and Mr Seagrave marked the position of the vessel on the chart, and found that they were one hundred and thirty miles from the Cape of Good Hope.

'If the wind holds, we shall be in to-morrow,' said Mr Seagrave to his wife. 'Juno, perhaps you may see your father and mother.'

Poor Juno shook her head, and a tear or two stole down her dark cheek. With a mournful face she told them, that her father and mother belonged to a Dutch boor, who had gone with them many miles into the interior: she had been parted from

Digitized by Google

them when quite a little child, and had been left at Cape Town.

'But you are free now, Juno,' said Mrs Seagrave; 'you have been to England, and whoever puts his foot on shore in England, becomes from that moment free.'

'Yes, Missy, I free; but still I have no fader or moder,' replied Juno, weeping. But little Albert patted her cheek, and she was soon smiling again, and playing with the little boy.

CHAPTER III.

THE next morning the Pacific arrived at the Cape, and anchored at Table Bay.

'Why do they call this Table Bay, Ready?' said William.

'I suppose it's because they call that great mountain the Table Mountain,' Master William; 'you see how flat the mountain is on the top.'

'Yes, it is quite as flat as a table.'

'Yes, and sometimes you will see the white clouds rolling down over the top of it in a very curious manner; and that the sailors call spreading the tablecloth; it is a sign of bad weather.'

'Then I hope they will not spread the tablecloth while we are here, Ready,' said William, 'for I shall certainly have no appetite. We have had bad weather enough already, and mamma suffers so much from it. What a pretty place it is!'

'We shall remain here two days, sir,' said Captain Osborn to Mr Seagrave, 'if you and Mrs Seagrave would like to go on shore.'

'I will go down and ask Mrs Seagrave,' said her husband, who went down the ladder, followed by William.

Upon the question being put to Mrs Seagrave, she replied that she was quite satisfied with the ship having no motion, and did not feel herself equal to going on shore; it was therefore decided that she should remain on board with the two younger children, and that, on the following day, Mr Seagrave should take William and Tommy to see Cape Town, and return on board before night.

The next morning, Captain Osborn lowered down one of the large boats, and Mr Seagrave, accompanied by Captain Osborn,

Digitized by Google

went on shore with William and Tommy. As soon as they landed, they went up to a gentleman's house, with whom Captain Osborn was acquainted. They stayed for a few minutes to drink a glass of lemonade, for it was very warm; and then it was proposed that they should go to the Company's Gardens, and see the wild beasts which were confined there, at which William was much delighted, and Tommy clapped his hands with joy.

'What are the Company's Gardens, papa?' inquired William.

'They were made by the Dutch East-India Company, at the time that the Cape of Good Hope was in their possession. They are, properly speaking, Botanical Gardens; but, at the same time, the wild animals are kept there.

'What shall we see?' said Tommy.

'You will see lions, Tommy, a great many in a large den together. You must not go too near them, recollect,' said Captain Osborn.

'No I won't,' said Tommy.

As soon as they entered the gates, Tommy escaped from Captain Osborn, and ran away in his hurry to see the lions; but Captain Osborn caught him again, and held him fast by the hand.

'Here is a pair of very strange birds,' said the gentleman who accompanied them; 'they are called Secretaries, on account of the feathers which hang behind their heads, as the feather of a pen does when a clerk puts it behind his ear: but they are very useful, for they are snake-killers; indeed, they would, if they could, live altogether upon snakes, which they are very great enemies to, never letting one escape. They strike them with their feet, and with such force as to kill them immediately.'

'Are there many snakes in this country?' inquired William.

'Yes, and very venomous snakes,' replied Mr Seagrave; 'so that these birds are very useful in destroying them.'

They continued their walk until they came to the den of the lions. It was a large place enclosed with a strong and high wall of stone, with only one window to it for the visitors to look at them, as it was open above. This window was wide, and with strong iron bars running from the top to the bottom; but the width between the bars was such that a lion could put his paw out with ease; and they were therefore cautioned not to go too

Digitized by Google

near. It was a fine sight to see eight or ten of these noble-looking animals lying down in various attitudes, quite indifferent apparently to the people outside—basking in the sun, and slowly moving their tufted tails to and fro. William examined them at a respectful distance from the bars; and so did Tommy, who had his mouth open with astonishment, in which there was at first not a little fear mixed; but he soon got bolder. The gentleman who had accompanied them, and who had been long at the Cape, was relating to Mr Seagrave and Captain Osborn some very curious anecdotes about the lion. William and they were so interested that they did not perceive that Tommy had slipped back to the grated window of their den. Tommy looked at the lions, and then he wanted to make them move about: there was one fine full-grown young lion about three years old, who was lying down nearest to the window; and Tommy took up a stone and threw it at him: the lion appeared not to notice it, for he did not move, although he fixed his eyes upon Tommy; so Tommy became more brave, and threw another, and then another, approaching each time nearer to the bars of the window.

All of a sudden the lion gave a tremendous roar, and sprang at Tommy, bounding against the iron bars of the cage with such force that, had they not been very strong, it must have broken them. As it was, they shook and rattled so that pieces of mortar fell from the stones. Tommy shrieked; and, fortunately for himself, fell back and tumbled head over heels, or the lion's paws would have reached him. Captain Osborn and Mr Seagrave ran up to Tommy, and picked him up: he roared with fright as soon as he could fetch his breath, while the lion stood at the bars, lashing his tail, snarling, and showing his enormous fangs.

'Take me away—take me on board the ship,' cried Tommy, who was terribly frightened.

'What did you do, Tommy?' said Captain Osborn.

'I won't throw any more stones, Mr Lion; I won't indeed,' cried Tommy, looking terrified towards the animal.

Mr Seagrave scolded Tommy well for his foolish conduct, and by degrees he became more composed; but he did not recover himself until they had walked some distance away from the lions' den.

When they had seen everything, they went back to the

Digitized by Google

gentleman's house to dinner; and, after dinner, they returned on board, when Tommy's adventure with the lion was told to his mother, who declared that she never should be able to trust him out of her sight.

CHAPTER IV.

THE following morning the fresh water and provisions were received on board, and once more the Pacific stretched her broad canvas to the winds, and there was every prospect of a rapid voyage, as for many days she continued her passage with a fair wind and flowing sheet. But this did not continue: it fell calm, and remained so for nearly three days, during which not a breath of wind was to be seen on the wide expanse of water; all nature appeared as if in repose, except that now and then an albatross would drop down at some distance from the stern of the vessel, and as he swam lazily along with his wings half furled, pick up the fragments of food which had been thrown over the side.

'What great bird is that, Ready?' inquired William.

'It is an albatross, Master William, the largest sea-bird we have. Their wings are very long. I have seen them shot, and they have measured eleven feet from the tip of one wing to the tip of the other when the wings have been spread out.'

'It is the first one that I have seen,' said William.

'Because you seldom meet them north of the Cape, sir: people do say that they go to sleep on the wing, balancing themselves high up in the air.'

'Papa,' said William, turning to Mr Seagrave, who stood by, 'why is it that one bird can swim and another cannot? You recollect when Tommy drove the hens into the large pond, they flounced about, and their feathers became wet, and would support them no longer, and then they were drowned. Now, how does a sea-bird contrive to remain so long on the water?'

'Because a sea-bird, William, is provided with a sort of oil, on purpose to anoint the outside of its feathers, and this oil prevents the water from penetrating them. Have you not observed the ducks on shore dressing their feathers with their

Digitized by Google

bills? They were then using this oil to make their feathers waterproof.'

On the third day of the calm, the barometer fell so low as to induce Captain Osborn to believe that they should have a severe gale, and every preparation was made to meet it, should it come on. Nor was he mistaken: towards midnight the clouds gathered up fast, and as they gathered up in thick piles, heaped one over the other, the lightning darted through them in every direction; and as the clouds rose up, so did the wind, but at first only in heavy gusts, and then lulling again to a calm.

'Ready,' said Captain Osborn, 'how do you think we shall have the wind?'

'Why, Captain Osborn, to tell you the truth, I don't think it will be steady to one point long. It may at first blow hard from the north, but it's my idea it will shift soon to some other quarter, and blow still harder.'

'What think you, Mackintosh?'

'We'll have plenty of it, and a long steady gale, that's my notion: and the sooner we ship the dead lights the better.'

Mr Seagrave, with William, happened to be standing by at the time of this conversation, and at the term *dead* lights Willy's face expressed some anxiety. Ready perceived it, and said,—

'That's a foolish name they give to the shutters which go over the cabin-windows to prevent the water from breaking into the cabin when a vessel sails before the wind; you know we had them on the last time that we had a gale, so don't you go down to frighten your mother by telling her that the dead lights are shipped.

'I was not afraid, Ready, but I was thinking of my mother I acknowledge; she has been so very weak these last two days.'

'But, Ready,' said Captain Osborn, 'why do you think that we shall have a shift of wind?'

'Well, I don't know; perhaps I was wrong,' replied the old man, 'and Mr Mackintosh is right: the wind does seem to come steady from the north-east, that's certain;' and Ready walked away to the binnacle, and looked at the compass. Mr Seagrave and William then went below, and Mr Mackintosh went forward to give his orders. As soon as they were all gone, Ready went up again to Captain Osborn, and said—

Digitized by Google

'Captain Osborn, it's not for me to contradict Mr Mackintosh, but that's of little consequence in a time like this: I should have held to my opinion, had it not been that the gentleman passenger and his son were standing by; but now, as the coast is clear, I tell you that we shall have something worse than a gale of wind. I have been in these latitudes before, and I am an old seaman, as you know. There's something in the air, and there has been something during the last three days of calm, which reminds me too well of what I have seen here before; and I am sure that we shall have little better than a hurricane, as far as wind goes—and worse in one point, that it will last much longer than hurricanes generally do. I have been watching, and even the birds tell me so, and they are told by their nature, which is never mistaken.'

'Well, and I am inclined to agree with you, Ready; so we must send top-gallant yards down on deck, and all the small sails and lumber out of the tops. Get the try-sail aft and bent, and lower down the gaff. I will go forward.'

They had no time to lose: their preparations were hardly complete before the wind had settled to a fierce gale from the north-east. The sea rose rapidly; top-sail after top-sail was furled; and by dusk the Pacific was flying through the water with the wind on her quarter, under reefed fore-sail and storm stay-sail. It was with difficulty that three men at the wheel could keep the helm, such were the blows which the vessel received from the heavy seas on the quarter. Not one seaman in the ship took advantage of his watch below to go to sleep that night, careless as they generally are; the storm was too dreadful. About three o'clock in the morning the wind suddenly subsided; it was but for a minute or two, and then it again burst on the vessel from another quarter of the compass, as Ready had foretold. Captain Osborn was standing by the weather gunnel, holding on by one of the belaying pins, when he said to Mackintosh, who was near him,

'How long will this last, think you?'

'Longer than the ship will,' replied the mate, gravely.

'I should hope not,' replied the captain; 'still it cannot look worse. What do you think, Ready?'

'Far more fear from above than from below just now,' replied

Digitized by Google

Ready, pointing to the yard-arms of the ship, to each of which were little balls of electric matter attached, flaring out to a point. 'Look at those two clouds, sir, rushing at each other; if I——'

Ready had not time to finish what he would have said, before a blaze of light, so dazzling that it left them all in utter darkness for some seconds afterwards, burst upon their vision, accompanied with a peal of thunder at which the whole vessel trembled fore and aft. A crash—a rushing forward—and a shriek were heard, and when they had recovered their eyesight, the foremast had been rent by the lightning as if it had been a lath, and the ship was in flames: the men at the wheel, blinded by the lightning, as well as appalled, could not steer; the ship broached to—away went the mainmast over the side—and all was wreck, confusion, and dismay.

Fortunately the heavy seas which poured over the forecastle soon extinguished the flames, or they all must have perished; but the ship lay now helpless, and at the mercy of the waves, beating violently against the wrecks of the masts which floated to leeward, but were still held fast to the vessel by their rigging. As soon as they could recover from the shock, Ready and the first mate hastened to the wheel to try to get the ship before the wind; but this they could not do, as, the foremast and mainmast being gone, the mizenmast prevented her paying off and answering to the helm. Ready, having persuaded two of the men to take the helm, made a sign to Mackintosh (for now the wind was so loud that they could not hear each other speak), and, going aft, they obtained axes, and cut away the mizen-rigging; the mizen-topmast and head of the mizenmast went over the side, and then the stump of the foremast was sufficient to get the ship before the wind again. Still there was much delay and much confusion before they could clear away the wreck of the masts; and, as soon as they could make inquiry, they found that four of the men had been killed by the lightning and the fall of the foremast, and there were now but eight remaining, besides Captain Osborn and his two mates.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER V.

SAILORS are never discouraged by danger as long as they have any chance of relieving themselves by their own exertions. The loss of their shipmates, so instantaneously summoned away—the wrecked state of the vessel—the wild surges burying them beneath their angry waters—the howling of the wind—the dazzling of the lightning, and the pealing of the thunder, did not prevent them from doing what their necessity demanded. Mackintosh, the first mate, rallied the men, and contrived himself to fix a block and strap to the still smoking stump of the foremast; a rope was rove through the block, and the main-topgallant sail hoisted, so that the vessel might run faster before the gale, and answer her helm better than she did.

The ship was again before the wind, and comparatively safe, notwithstanding the heavy blows she now received from the pursuing waves. Night again came on, but there was no repose, and the men were worn out with exposure and fatigue.

The countenance of Captain Osborn showed great anxiety: he had a heavy responsibility on his shoulders—he might lose a valuable ship, and still more valuable cargo, even if they did not all lose their lives; for they were now approaching where the sea was studded with low coral islands, upon which they might be thrown by the waves and wind, without having the slightest power to prevent it in their present disabled condition.

Ready was standing by him when Captain Osborn said,—

'I don't much like this, Ready; we are now running on danger, and have no help for it.'

'That's true enough,' replied Ready; 'we have no help for it; it is God's will, sir, and his will be done.'

'You are right,' replied Captain Osborn; 'but hold hard, Ready, that sea's aboard of us.'

Ready had just time to cling with both hands to the belaying pins when the sea poured over the vessel, with a volume of water which for some time swept them off their legs; they clung on firmly, and at last recovered their feet.

'She started a timber or two with that blow, I rather think,' said Ready, as he took off his hat to shake the water from it.

Digitized by Google

'I'm afraid so; the best vessel ever built could not stand such shocks long,' replied Captain Osborn; 'and at present, with our weak crew, I do not see that we can get more sail upon her.'

All that night the ship flew in darkness before the gale. At daybreak the wind abated, and the sea went down: the ship was, however, still kept before the wind, for she had suffered too much to venture to put her broadside to the sea. Preparations were now made for getting up jury-masts; and the worn-out seamen were busily employed, under the direction of Captain Osborn and his two mates, when Mr Seagrave and William came upon deck.

'Father,' said Willy after a pause, 'how shall we ever get to Sydney without masts or sails?'

'Why, Master William,' replied Ready, 'we must do what we can: we sailors are never much at a loss, and I dare say before night you will find us under some sort of sail again. We have lost our great masts, so we must put up jury-masts, as we call them, that is, little ones, and little sails upon them; and, if it pleases God, we shall see Sydney yet. How is madam, sir?' continued Ready to Mr Seagrave; 'is she better?'

'I fear she is very weak and ill,' replied Mr Seagrave; 'nothing but fine weather will do her any good. Do you think that it will be fine now?'

'Why, sir, to tell you the truth, I fear we shall have more of it yet: I have not given my thoughts to the captain, as I might be mistaken; but still I think so—I've not been fifty years at sea without learning something. I don't like the gathering of that bank there, Mr Seagrave, and I shouldn't wonder if it were to blow again from the very same quarter, and that before dark.'

'God's will be done,' replied Mr Seagrave; 'but I am very fearful about my poor wife, who is completely worn to a shadow.'

'I shouldn't think so much about that, sir, as I really never knew of people dying that way, although they suffer much. Master William, do you know that we have lost some of our men since you were down below?'

'No—I heard the steward say something outside about the foremast; but I did not like to ask, as mamma was so frightened.'

'You were a kind boy for that, Master William; but hear me,

Digitized by Google

—we have lost five of our smartest and best men; Wilson was washed overboard—Fennings and Masters struck dead with the lightning—and Jones and Emery crushed by the fall of the foremast. Master William, did any of these men imagine, when they left the Cape, or indeed the day or the hour before it happened, that their souls were to be required of them, and their bodies should be now floating hundreds of miles from the land? You are young, Master Willy, but you cannot think too early of your Maker, or call to mind what they say in the Burial Service,—"In the midst of life we are in death."'

CHAPTER VI.

Mr Seagrave and William went down below into the cabin, and, in the mean time, they were not idle upon deck; the carpenter was busy fixing a step for one of the spare topmasts instead of a mainmast, and the men were fitting the rigging; the ship unfortunately had sprung a leak, and four hands at the pumps interfered very much with their task. As Ready had prophesied, before night the gale blew, the sea rose again with the gale, and the leaking of the vessel increased so much, that all other labour was suspended for that at the pump. For two more days did the storm continue, during which time the crew were worn out with fatigue—they could pump no longer; the ship, as she rolled, proved that she had a great deal of water in her hold—when, melancholy as were their prospects already, a new disaster took place, which was attended with most serious results. Captain Osborn was on the forecastle giving some orders to the men, when the strap of the block which hoisted up the maintop-gallant yard on the stump of the foremast gave way, the yard and sail came down on the deck and struck him senseless. As long as Captain Osborn commanded them, the sailors had so high an opinion of his abilities as a seaman, and were so encouraged by his cheerful disposition, that they performed their work well and cheerfully; but now that he was, if not killed, at all events senseless and incapable of action, they no longer felt themselves under control. Mackintosh was

Digitized by Google

too much disliked by the seamen to allow his words to have any weight with them. They were regardless of his injunctions or requests, and they now consulted among themselves.

'The gale is broke, my men, and we shall have fine weather now,' observed Ready, going up to the sailors on the forecastle. 'The wind is going down fast.'

'Yes,' replied one of the men, 'and the ship is going down fast, that's quite as certain.'

'A good spell at the pumps would do us some good now,' replied Ready. 'What d'ye say, my lads?'

'A glass of grog or two would do us more,' replied the seaman. 'What d'ye say, my boys? I don't think that the captain would refuse us, poor fellow, if he could speak.'

'What do you mean to do, my lads?' inquired Mackintosh; 'not get drunk, I hope?'

'Why not?' observed another of the men; 'the ship must go down soon?'

'Perhaps she may—I will not deny it,' said Mackintosh; 'but that is no reason why we should not be saved: now, if you get drunk, there is no chance of any one being saved, and my life is precious to me. I'm ready to join with you in anything you please, and you may decide what is to be done; but get drunk you shall not, if I can help it, that's certain.'

'And how can you help it?' replied one of the seamen, surlily.

'Because two resolute men can do a great deal—I may say three, for in this instance Ready will be of my side, and I can call to my assistance the cabin passenger—recollect the fire-arms are all in the cabin.

As Mackintosh's courage and determination were well known, the seamen again consulted together, and then asked him what he proposed.

'We have one good boat left, the new yawl on the booms: the others, as you know, are washed away, with the exception of the little boat astern, which is useless, as she is knocked almost to pieces. Now we cannot be very far from some of the islands, indeed I think we are among them now. Let us fit out the boat with everything which we require, go about our work steadily and quietly, drink as much grog now as will not hurt

Digitized by Google

us, and take a good provision of it with us. Ready, do I give good advice or not?'

'You give very good advice, Mackintosh—only what is to become of the cabin passengers, the women, and children? and are you going to leave poor Captain Osborn, who lays there abaft, breathless and insensible? or what do you mean to do?'

'We won't leave the captain,' said one of the seamen.

'No—no!' exclaimed the others.

'And the passengers?'

'Very sorry for them,' replied the former spokesman; 'but we shall have enough to do to save our own lives; the boat is not over large.'

'Well, my lads, I agree with you,' said Mackintosh. 'Charity begins at home. What do you say, then?—shall it be so?'

'Yes,' replied the seamen, unanimously; and Ready knew that it was in vain to expostulate. They now set about preparing the boat and providing for their wants. Biscuits, salt pork, two or three small casks of water, and a barrel of rum were collected at the gangway; Mackintosh brought up his quadrant and a compass, some muskets, powder and shot; the carpenter, with the assistance of another man, cut away the ship's bulwarks down to the gunnel, so as to enable them to launch the boat overboard, for they could not of course hoist her out now that the masts were gone. In an hour everything was prepared. A long rope was made fast to the boat, which was brought to the gunnel ready for launching overboard, and then the ship's broadside was brought to the wind. Ready had taken no part in their labour; he had once or twice sounded the well, to ascertain if the water gained upon the ship, and then sat down by the side of Captain Osborn, who still remained insensible from the blow which he had received on his head. As the ship was brought to the wind, Mr Seagrave came on deck and looked around him.

He perceived the boat ready for launching, the provisions and water at the gangway, the ship brought to the wind, and rolling slowly to the heave of the sea; at last he saw Ready sitting down by Captain Osborn, who was apparently dead. 'What is all this, Ready?' inquired Mr Seagrave. 'Are they going to leave the ship? have they killed Captain Osborn?'

Digitized by Google

'No, sir—not quite so bad as that. Poor Captain Osborn was struck down by the fall of the yard, and has been insensible ever since; but, as to the other matter, I fear that is decided; you see they are launching the boat.'

'But my poor wife, she will never be able to go—she cannot move—she is so ill!'

'I'm afraid, Mr Seagrave, that they have no idea of taking either you, or your wife, or your children, with them.

'What! leave us here to perish? Merciful Heaven! how cruel—how barbarous!'

'Well, Mr Seagrave, if I must speak, I confess to you that there is not a harder heart among them than that of Mr Mackintosh, and it's useless speaking to him or any one of them; and you must not be too severe upon them neither: the boat is small, and could not hold more people with the provisions which they take with them—that is the fact. If they were to take you and your family into the boat, it might be the cause of all perishing together; if I thought otherwise, I would try what I could do to persuade them, but it is useless.'

'What must be done then, Ready?'

'We must put our trust in a merciful God, Mr Seagrave, who will dispose of us as he thinks fit.'

'*We* must. What! do not you go with them?'

'No, Mr Seagrave. I have been thinking about it this last hour, and I have made up my mind to remain with you. They intend to take poor Captain Osborn with them, and give him a chance, and have offered to take me; but I shall stay here.'

The sailors came aft, and lifted up the still insensible captain. As they were going away, one of them said, 'Come, Ready, there's no time to lose.'

'Never mind me, Williams; I shall stick to the ship,' replied Ready. 'I wish you success with all my heart, and, Mr Mackintosh, I have but one promise to exact from you, and I hope you will not refuse me; which is, that if you are saved, you will then not forget those you leave here on board, and take measures for their being searched for among the islands.'

'Nonsense, Ready! come into the boat,' replied the first mate.

'I shall stay here, Mr Mackintosh; and I only beg that you will promise me what I ask. Acquaint Mr Seagrave's friends

Digitized by Google

with what has happened, and where it is most likely we may be found, if it please God to save us: that is all that is necessary. Do you promise me that?'

'Yes I do, Ready, if you are determined to stay: but,' continued he, going up to Ready, and whispering to him, 'it is madness:—come away, man!'

'Good-bye, Mr Mackintosh,' replied Ready, extending his hand. 'You will keep your promise?'

After much further expostulation on the part of Mackintosh and the seamen, to which Ready gave a deaf ear, the boat was pushed off, and they made sail to the north-east.

CHAPTER VII.

For some time after the boat had shoved off from the ship, old Ready remained with his arms folded, watching it in silence, Mr Seagrave stood by him; his heart was too full for utterance, for he imagined that as the boat increased her distance from the vessel, so did every ray of hope depart, and that his wife and children, himself, and the old man who was by his side, were doomed to perish. His countenance was that of a man in utter despair. At last old Ready spoke.

'If I thought our situation hopeless, I would candidly say so; but there always is hope, even at the very worst,—and there always ought to be trust in that God without whose knowledge not a sparrow falls to the ground. But, Mr Seagrave, I shall speak as a seaman, and tell you what our probabilities are. The ship is half-full of water, from her seams having opened by the straining in the gale, and the heavy blows which she received; but now that the gale has abated, she has recovered herself very much. I have sounded the well, and find that she has not made many inches within the last two hours, and probably, as she closes her seams, will make less. If, therefore, it pleases God that the fine weather should continue, there is no fear of the vessel sinking under us for some little time; and as we are now amongst the islands, it is not impossible, nay it is very probable, that we may be able to run her ashore, and thus save our lives.

Digitized by Google

I thought of all this when I refused to go in the boat, and I thought also, Mr Seagrave, that if you were to have been deserted by me as well as by all the rest, you would have been unable yourself to take advantage of any chances which might turn up in your favour, and therefore I have remained, hoping, under God's providence, to be the means of assisting you and your family in this sore position. I think now it would be better that you should go down into the cabin, and with a cheerful face encourage poor Mrs Seagrave with the change in the weather, and the hopes of arriving in some place of safety. If she does not know that the men have quitted the ship, do not tell her; say that the steward is with the other men, which will be true enough, and, if possible, leave her in the dark as to what has taken place; Master William can be trusted, and if you will send him here to me, I will talk to him. What do you think, Mr Seagrave?'

'I hardly know what to think, Ready, or how sufficiently to thank you for your self-devotion, if I may so term it, in this exigency.'

'Do not speak of that, sir; I am an old man with few wants, and whose life is of little use now. All I wish to feel is, that I am trying to do my duty in that situation into which it has pleased God to call me. Thank you kindly, Mr Seagrave, nevertheless: now I think you had better go down, and I will look about me a little.' Mr Seagrave pressed the hand of Ready, and went down without making any reply. Juno and William were the only two who were sitting up.

William made a sign to his father that his mother was asleep, and then said in a whisper, 'I did not like to leave the cabin while you were on deck, but the steward has not been here these two hours: he went to milk the goat for baby, and has not returned. We have had no breakfast, none of us.'

'William, go on deck,' replied his father: 'Ready wishes to speak to you—I will stay here.'

William went on deck to Ready, who soon explained to him the position in which they were placed; he pointed out to him the necessity of his doing all he could to assist his father and him, and not to alarm his mother in her precarious state of health. William, who, as it may be expected, looked very grave, did,

Digitized by Google

however, immediately enter into Ready's views, and proceeded to do his best. 'Now, Ready,' said he, 'you know the steward has left with the other men, and when my mother wakes she will ask why the children have had no breakfast. What can I do?'

'I don't know; but I think you can milk one of the goats if I show you how, while I go and get the other things ready; and, Master William, I have sounded the well just before you came up, and I don't think she makes much water; and,' continued he, looking round him, and up above, 'we shall have fine weather and a smooth sea before night.'

By the united exertions of Ready and William, the breakfast was prepared, while Mrs Seagrave still continued in a sound sleep. The motion of the ship was now very little: she only rolled very slowly from one side to the other, for she was heavy with the water which had leaked into her; the sea and wind had gone down, and the sun shone brightly over their heads; the boat had been out of sight some time, and the ship did not go through the water faster than three miles an hour, for she had no other sail upon her than the maintop-gallant-sail hoisted up on the stump of the foremast. Ready, who had been some time down in the cabin, proposed to Mr Seagrave that Juno and all the children should go on deck. 'They cannot be expected to be quiet, sir; and, now that Madam is in such a sweet sleep, it would be a pity to wake her.' Mr Seagrave agreed to the good sense of this proposal, and went on deck with Juno and the children, leaving William in the cabin to watch his mother. Poor Juno was very much astonished when she came up the ladder and perceived the condition of the vessel and the absence of the men; but Mr Seagrave told her what had happened, and cautioned her against saying a word to Mrs Seagrave. Even Tommy and Caroline could not help asking where the masts and sails were, and what had become of Captain Osborn.

'Look there, sir,' said Ready, 'do you see those birds hovering over the waves?'

'I do.'

'Well, sir, those birds never go far from land, that's all; and now, sir, I'll go down for my quadrant; for, although I cannot tell the longitude just now, at all events I can find out the latitude we are in, and then by looking at the chart shall be able to

Digitized by Google

give some kind of guess whereabout we are, if we see land soon.'

'It is nearly noon now,' observed Ready, reading off his quadrant. 'I'll just go down and work the latitude, and then I'll bring up the chart.'

Mr Seagrave remained on deck. He was soon in deep and solemn thought; nor was it to be wondered at; the ship a wreck and deserted—left alone on the wide water with his wife and helpless family, with but one to assist him: had that one deserted him as well as the rest, what would have been his position then? Utter helplessness! And now what had they to expect? It was not until some time after these reflections had passed through his mind, that Mr Seagrave could recall himself to a sense of thankfulness to the Almighty for having hitherto preserved them, or could say with humility, 'O Lord! thy will, not mine, be done.' But, having once succeeded in repressing his murmurs and his doubts of the goodness of Providence, he then felt that he had courage and faith to undergo every trial which might be imposed upon him.

'Here is the chart, sir,' said Ready, 'and I have drawn a pencil line through our latitude: you perceive that it passes through this cluster of islands; and I think we must be among them, or very near. Now I must put something on for dinner, and then look sharp out for the land. Will you take a look round, Mr Seagrave, especially ahead and on the bows?'

Ready went down to see what he could procure for dinner, as the seamen, when they left the ship, had collected almost all which came first to hand. He soon procured a piece of salt beef and some potatoes, which he put into the saucepan, and then returned on deck.

Mr Seagrave was forward, looking over the bows, and Ready went there to him.

'Ready, I think I see something, but I can hardly tell what it is: it appears to be in the air, and yet it is not clouds. Look there, where I point my finger.'

'You're right, sir,' replied Ready; 'there is something; it is not the land which you see, but it is the trees upon the land, which are refracted, as they call it, so as to appear, as you say, as if they were in the air. I will go down and get my glass.'

'It is the land, Mr Seagrave,' said Ready, after examining it

Digitized by Google

with his glass; 'yes, it is so,' continued he, musing; 'I wish that we had seen it earlier; and yet we must be thankful.'

'Why so, Ready?'

'Only, sir, as the ship forges so slowly through the water, I fear that we shall not reach it before dark, and I should have wished to have had daylight to have laid her nicely on it.'

'There is very little wind now.'

'Well, let us hope that there will be more,' replied Ready; 'if not, we must do our best;—but I must now go to the helm, for we must steer right for the island; it would not do to pass it, for, Mr Seagrave, although the ship does not leak so much as she did, yet I must now tell you that I do not think that she could be kept more than twenty-four hours above water. I thought otherwise this morning when I sounded the well; but when I went down in the hold for the beef, I then perceived that we were in more danger than I had any idea of.'

Ready went to the helm and steered a course for the land, which was not so far distant as he had imagined, for the island was very low: by degrees the wind freshened up, and they went faster through the water; and now the trees, which had appeared as if in the air, joined on to the land, and they could make out that it was a low coral island covered with groves of cocoa-nuts. Occasionally Ready gave the helm up to Mr Seagrave, and went forward to examine. When they were within three or four miles of it, Ready came back from the forecastle, and said, 'I think I see my way pretty clear, sir: you see we are to the windward of the island, and there is always deep water to the windward of these sort of isles, and reefs and shoals to leeward; we must, therefore, find some little cleft in the coral rock to dock her in, as it were, or she may fall back into deep water after she has taken the ground, for sometimes these islands run up like a wall, with forty or fifty fathom of water close to the weather sides of them; but I do see a spot where I think she may be put on shore with safety. You see those three cocoa-nut trees close together on the beach? Now, sir, I cannot well see them as I steer, so do you go forward, and if I am to steer more to the right, put out your right hand, and if to the left, the same with your left; and, when the ship's head is as it ought to be, then drop the hand which you have raised.'

Digitized by Google

'I perfectly understand you, Ready,' replied Mr Seagrave, who then went forward and directed the steering of the vessel as they neared the island. When they were within half a mile of it, the colour of the water changed, very much to the satisfaction of Ready, who knew that the weather side of the island would not be so steep as was usually the case; still it was an agitating moment as they ran on to the beach. They were now within a cable's length, and still the ship did not ground; a little nearer, and there was a grating at her bottom—it was the breaking off of the coral-trees, which grew below like forests under water; again she grated, and more harshly, then struck, and then again; at last she struck violently, as the swell lifted her farther on, and then remained fast and quiet. Ready let go the helm to ascertain the position of the ship. He looked over the stern and around the ship, and found that she was firmly fixed, fore and aft, upon a bed of coral rocks.

CHAPTER VIII.

'ALL's well so far, sir,' said Ready to Mr Seagrave; 'and now let us return thanks to Heaven.'

Ready kneeled down on the deck, took off his hat, and remained a short time in prayer. Mr Seagrave did the same: the children at first looked on and wondered, and then knelt down by the side of them, following the example of Juno.

As they rose, William came up and said,—'Father, my mother has sent me to you; she was awakened by the noise under the ship's bottom, and is frightened—will you go down to her?'

'Yes, my child, directly,' said Mr Seagrave.

'What is the matter, my dear—and where have you all been?' exclaimed Mrs Seagrave, when her husband went down below. 'I have been so frightened—I was in such a sound sleep, and I was awakened with such a dreadful noise.'

'Much took place, dearest, before you went to sleep, which was concealed from you; but now, as I expect we shall all go on shore in a short time——'.

Digitized by Google

'Go on shore, my dear?

'Yes, on shore. Now be calm, and hear what has happened, and how much we have reason to be grateful to Heaven.'

Mr Seagrave then entered into a detail of all that had passed. Mrs Seagrave heard him without reply; and when he had finished, she threw herself in his arms and wept bitterly.

Mr Seagrave remained with his wife, using all his efforts to console her, until Juno re-appeared with the children, for it was now getting late: and then Mr Seagrave returned on deck to consult with Ready.

'Ready,' he asked, 'how are we to get on shore?—and when on shore, how are we to exist?

'I have thought of that too, sir, and I must have your assistance, and even that of Master William, to get the little boat on board to repair her: her bottom is stove in, it is true, but I am carpenter enough for that, and with some well-tarred canvas I can make her sufficiently water-tight to land us all in safety, until I have an opportunity of putting her in better order. We must set to at daylight.'

'And when we get on shore?'

'Why, Mr Seagrave, where there are cocoa-nut trees in such plenty as there are on that island, there is no fear of starvation, even if we had not the ship's provisions. I expect a little difficulty with regard to water, for the island is low—very low and small; but we cannot expect to find everything exactly as we wish.'

'Can we do anything to-night?'

'I can do a little, Mr Seagrave; but you cannot assist me till to-morrow morning, except indeed to help me to drag these two spars aft; and then I can rig a pair of sheers, and have them all ready for hoisting up to-morrow morning to get the boat in. You see, with so little strength on board. and no masts, we shall be obliged to contrive.'

Mr Seagrave assisted Ready in getting the two spars aft, and laid on the spot which was required. 'There now, Mr Seagrave, you may go down below. Master William had better let loose the two dogs, and give them a little victuals, for we have quite forgot them, poor things. I shall keep watch, to-night, for I have plenty to do, and plenty to think of; so good night, sir.'

Digitized by Google

Mr Seagrave wished Ready good night, and went below. Ready remained on deck, lashing the heads of the spars, and fixing his tackles ready for the morrow. When all was done, he sat down upon one of the hen-coops aft, and remained in deep thought. At last, tired with watching and exertion, the old man fell asleep. He was awakened at daylight by the dogs, who had been set at liberty, and who, after walking about the ship and finding nobody, had then gone to sleep at the cabin door. At daybreak they had roused up, and going on deck had found old Ready asleep on the hencoop, and were licking his face in their joy at having discovered him. 'Ay,' said the old man, as he got off the hencoop, 'you'll all three be useful, if I mistake not, by and by. Down, Vixen, down—poor creature, you've lost a good master, I'm afraid.'

'Stop—now let me see,' said Ready, talking to himself; 'first—but I'll get the logboard and a bit of chalk, and write them down, for my memory is not quite so good as it was.'

Ready placed the logboard on the hencoop, and then wrote on it with the chalk :—'Three dogs, two goats, and Billy, the kid (I think there's five pigs); fowls (quite enough); three or four pigeons (I'm sure); the cow (she has lain down and won't get up again, I'm afraid, so we must kill her); and there's the Merino ram and sheep belonging to Mr Seagrave—plenty of live stock. Now what's the first things we must get on shore after we are all landed?—a spar and top-gallant-sail for a tent, a coil or two of rope, a mattress or two for Madam and the children, two axes, hammer and nails, something to eat—yes, and something to cut it with. There, that will do for the present,' said old Ready, getting up. 'Now I'll just light the fire, get the water on, and, while I think of it, boil two or three pieces of beef and pork to go on shore with them; and then I'll call up Mr Seagrave, for I reckon it will be a hard day's work: and may we have God's blessing on it!'

CHAPTER IX.

As soon as Ready had executed his intentions, and had fed the animals, he went to the cabin, and called Mr Seagrave and

Digitized by Google

William. With their assistance the sheers were raised, and secured in their place; the boat was then hooked on, but, as one person was required to bear it clear of the davits and taff-rail, they could not hoist it in.

'Master William, will you run down to Juno, and tell her to come on deck to assist us—we must all work now?'

William soon returned with Juno, who was a strong girl, and, with her assistance, they succeeded in getting the boat in, and then they sent Juno down again into the cabin.

The boat was turned over, and Ready commenced his work; while Mr Seagrave, at his request, put the pitch-pot on the galley fire, all ready for pitching the canvas when it was nailed on. It was not till dinner-time that Ready, who had worked hard, could patch up the boat; he then payed the canvas and the seams which he had caulked with pitch both inside and out.

'I think we shall do now, sir,' said Ready; 'we'll drag her to the gangway and launch her.'

A rope was made fast to the boat, to hold her to the ship: she was then launched over the gunnel by the united exertions of Mr Seagrave and Ready, and to their great satisfaction she appeared to leak very little.

'Now, sir,' said Ready, 'what shall we do first—take some things on shore, or some of the children?'

'What do you say, Ready?'

'Why then, sir, with submission to you, I think, as the water is as smooth as glass, and we can land anywhere, that you and I had better go first to reconnoitre,—it is not two hundred yards to the beach, and we shall lose but little time.'

'Very well, Ready: I will first run down and tell my wife.'

And, in the mean while, I'll put the sail into the boat, and one or two other things; it will be so much time saved.'

Ready put the sail in, an axe, a musket, and some cord. Mr Seagrave came up again; they both got into the boat and pulled on shore.

When they landed they found that they could see nothing of the interior of the island, the cocoa-nut groves were so thick; but to their right they perceived, at about a quarter of a mile off, a small sandy cove, with brushwood growing in front of the cocoa-nut trees.

Digitized by Google

'That,' said Ready, pointing to it, 'must be our location, as the Americans call it. Let us get into the boat again, Mr Seagrave, and pull to it; it is but a little way to pull, but a long way to carry the things in the boat.'

In a few minutes they arrived at the cove; the water was shallow and as clear as crystal. Beneath the boat's bottom they could see beautiful shells, and the fish darting about in every direction.

The sand extended about forty yards from the water, and then commenced the brushwood, which ran back about forty yards further, intermingled with single cocoa-nut trees, until it joined the cocoa-nut grove. They pulled the boat in, and landed.

'Well, Ready,' asked Mr Seagrave, 'now that we are in the grove, what do you think?'

'I was looking for a place to fix a tent up for the present, sir, and I think that on that little rise would be a very good place till we can look about us and do better; but we have no time now, sir, for we have plenty of trips to make before nightfall. If you please, we'll haul the sail and other articles on to the beach, and then return on board.'

As they were pulling the boat back, Ready said, 'I've been thinking about what is best, Mr Seagrave. Would Mrs Seagrave mind your leaving her?—if not, I should say we should have Juno and Master William on shore first, as they can be of use.'

'I do not think that she will mind being left on board with William and the children, provided that I return for her when she is to come on shore herself with the baby.'

'Well then, let Master William remain on board if you please, sir. I'll land you and Juno, Master Tommy, and the dogs, this time, for they will be a protection in case of accidents. You and Juno can be doing something while I return by myself for the other articles we shall require.'

As soon as they arrived on board, Mr Seagrave went down to cheer his wife with the account of what they had seen, and he obtained her consent to the arrangement made by Ready. While he was down below, Ready had cast off the lashings of the two spars which had formed the sheers, and dragging them forward, had launched them over the gunnel, with lines fast to

Digitized by Google

them, ready for towing on shore. In a few minutes Juno and Tommy made their appearance on deck; Ready put some tools into the boat, and a couple of shovels, which he brought up when he went for the dogs, and once more they landed at the sandy cove.

'Now, Mr Seagrave, I'll remain on shore with you a little. First, we'll load the musket in case of need. We will take up the sail between us. Juno, you can carry the tools; and then we can come back again for the spars, and the rope, and the other things. Come, Master Tommy, you can carry a shovel, at all events, and that will make you of some use. We must all work now.'

Having taken all these things to the little knoll which Ready had pointed out before, they returned for the spars; and in two trips they had carried everything there, Tommy with the second shovel on his shoulder, and very proud to be employed.

'Here are two trees which will answer our purpose pretty well, said Ready, 'as they are far enough apart; we must lash the spars up to them, and then throw the sail over, and bring it down to the ground at both ends; that will be a beginning, at all events; and I will bring some more canvas on shore, to set up the other tent between these other trees, and also to shut up the two ends of both of them; then we shall have a shelter for Madam, and Juno, and the younger children, and another for Master William, Tommy, and ourselves. Now, sir, I'll just help you to lash the spars, and then I'll leave you to finish while I go on board again.'

'But how can we reach so high, Ready?'

'Why, sir, we can manage that by first lashing a spar as high as we can conveniently reach, and then standing on that while we lash the other in its proper place. I shall bring another spar on shore, that we may do the same when we set up the other tent.'

Having by this plan succeeded in lashing the spar high enough and throwing the sail over the spar, Ready and Mr Seagrave spread it out, and found that it made a very good-sized tent.

'Now, sir, I'll return on board; in the mean time if you can cut pegs from the brushwood to fasten the sail down to the ground, and then with the shovel cover the bottom of it with

Digitized by Google

sand to keep it down, it will be close enough when it is all finished. There's my knife, sir, if you haven't got one.'

'I shall do very well,' replied Mr Seagrave; 'Juno can help me to pull the canvas out tight when I am ready.'

'Yes; and in the mean time, Juno, take a shovel and level the inside of the tent nice and smooth, and throw out all those old cocoa-nut leaves, and look if you see any vermin lurking among them. It may be as well to say, Mr Seagrave, that should anything happen, and you require my assistance, you had better fire off the gun, and I will come on shore to you immediately.'

CHAPTER X.

When Ready returned on board, he first went down into the cabin to acquaint Mrs Seagrave and William with what they had done. Mrs Seagrave naturally felt anxious about her husband being on shore alone, and Ready informed her that they had agreed that, if anything should occur, Mr Seagrave would fire the musket. He then went down into the sail-room to get some canvas, a new top-gallant sail which was there, and a palm and needles with twine; and having put into the boat the sailmaker's bag with palm and needles, two mattresses, and blankets from the captain's state room, the saucepan with the beef and pork, and a spar which he towed astern, he found that he had as much as he could carry; but, as there was nobody but himself in it, he came on shore very well. Having, with the assistance of Mr Seagrave and Juno, got all the things up to the knoll, Ready lashed the spar up for the second tent, and then leaving them to fix it up like the other, he returned again on board. Juno had cleaned the tent out very nicely, and said that she had not found any animals or insects among the leaves. Before he went, Ready gave Tommy a stick, and told him to watch the beef and pork, and not allow the dogs to eat it all up, and Tommy, who was on his good behaviour, stood sentry over it as grave as a judge. Ready made two other trips to the ship, bringing with him more bedding, a bag of ship's biscuits, another of potatoes, plates, knives and forks, spoons, frying-pans,

Digitized by Google

and other cooking utensils, and a variety of other articles. He then showed Juno how to fill up the ends of the first tent with the canvas and sails he had brought on shore, so as to enclose it all round; Juno took the needle and twine, and worked very well. Ready, satisfied that she would be able to get on without them, now said, 'Mr Seagrave, we have but two hours more daylight, and it is right that Mrs Seagrave should come on shore now; so, if you please, we'll go off and fetch her and the children.'

As soon as they arrived on board, Mr Seagrave went down to his wife to propose her going on shore. She was much agitated, and very weak from her illness, but she behaved courageously notwithstanding, and, supported by her husband, she gained the deck, William following with the baby, and his little sister Caroline carried by Ready. With some difficulty they were all at last placed in the boat and shoved off; but Mrs Seagrave was so ill, that her husband was obliged to support her in his arms, and William took an oar. They landed very safely, and carried Mrs Seagrave up to the tent, and laid her down on one of the mattresses. She asked for a little water.

'And I have forgotten to bring any with me; well, I am a stupid old man; but I'll go on board directly,' said Ready. 'The fact is, I intended to look for it on the island as soon as I could, as it would save a deal of trouble.'

Ready returned on board as fast as he could, and brought on shore two kegs of fresh water, which he and William rolled up to the tent.

Juno had completely finished her task, and Mrs Seagrave, having drunk some water, declared that she was much better.

'I shall not return on board any more to-night,' said Ready, 'I feel tired—very tired indeed; and I haven't touched food this day, or even quenched my thirst.'

'You are ill, are you not, Ready?' said William.

'A little faint, Master William; I'm not so young as I was. Could you give me a little water?'

'Stop, William, I will,' said Mr Seagrave, taking up a tin can which had been filled for his wife: 'here, Ready, drink this.'

'I shall be better soon, sir; I'll just lie down a little, and then I'll have a biscuit and a little meat.'

Poor old Ready was indeed quite tired out; but he ate some-

Digitized by Google

thing, and felt much revived. Juno was very busy; she had given the children some of the salt meat and biscuit to eat. The baby, and Tommy, and Caroline had been put to bed, and the second tent was nearly ready.

'It will do very well for to-night, Juno,' said Mr Seagrave; 'we have done work enough for this day.'

CHAPTER XI.

Mr Seagrave was the first who awoke and rose from his bed on the ensuing morning. He stepped out of the tent, and looked around him. The sky was clear and brilliant. A light breeze ruffled o'er the surface of the water, and the tiny waves rippled one after another upon the white sand of the cove. To the left of the cove the land rose, forming small hills, behind which appeared the continuation of the cocoa-nut groves. To the right, a low ridge of coral rocks rose almost as a wall from the sea, and joined the herbage and brushwood at about a hundred paces, while the wreck of the Pacific, lying like some huge stranded monster, formed the prominent feature in the landscape.

When Mr Seagrave returned to the tent the dogs, who had laid themselves down upon the mattresses by the side of William and Tommy, fawned upon him. William woke up with their whining, and having received a caution from his father not to wake old Ready, he dressed himself and came out.

'Had I not better call Juno, father?' said William; 'I think I can without waking mamma, if she is asleep.'

'Then do, if you can, my boy; and I will see what cooking utensils Ready has brought on shore.'

William soon returned to his father, stating that his mother was in a sound sleep, and that Juno had got up without waking her or the two children.

'Well, we'll see if we cannot get some breakfast ready for them, William. Those dry cocoa-nut leaves will make an excellent fire.'

'But, father, how are we to light the fire? we have no tinder-box or matches.'

Digitized by Google

'No; but there are other ways, William, although, in most of them, tinder is necessary. The savages can produce fire by rubbing a soft piece of wood against a hard one. I'm afraid that we should be a long while doing that, but we have gunpowder, and can make tinder by wetting it and rubbing it on a rag or piece of paper, or indeed a piece of soft wood; and we have two ways of igniting gunpowder—one is by a flint and steel, and the other by collecting the sun's rays into one focus by a magnifying glass.'

'But, father, when we have lighted the fire what have we to cook? we have no tea or coffee.'

'No, I do not think we have,' replied Mr Seagrave.

'But we have potatoes, father.'

'Yes, William, but don't you think it would be better if we made our breakfast off the cold beef and pork and ship's biscuits for once, and not use the potatoes? We may want them all to plant, you know; but why should we not go on board of the ship ourselves? You can pull an oar pretty well, and we must all learn to work now, and not leave everything for poor old Ready to do. Come, William.'

Mr Seagrave then went down to the cove: the little boat was lying on the beach, just lifted by the rippling waves; they pushed her off, and got into her. 'I know where the steward kept the tea and coffee, father,' said William, as they pulled on board; 'Mamma would like some for breakfast I'm sure, and I'll milk the goats for baby.'

Although they were neither of them very handy at the oar, they were soon alongside of the ship; and having made the boat fast, they climbed on board.

William first went down to the cabin for the tea and coffee, and then left his father to collect other things while he went to milk the goats, which he did in a tin pan. He then poured the milk into a bottle, which he had washed out, that it might not be spilt, and went back to his father.

'I have filled these two baskets full of a great many things, William, which will be very acceptable to your mamma. What else shall we take?'

'Let us take the telescope, at all events, father; and let us take a whole quantity of clothes—they will please mamma: the

Digitized by Google

clean ones are all in the drawers—we can bring them up in a sheet; and then, father, let us bring some of the books on shore; and I'm sure mamma will long for her Bible and Prayer-book;—here they are.'

In a short time everything was put into the boat, and they pulled on shore again. They found Juno, who had been washing herself, waiting for them at the cove to assist to take up the things.

'Well, Juno, how do you find yourself this morning?'

'Quite well, massa,' said Juno: and then pointing to the clear water, she said, 'Plenty fish here.'

'Yes, if we only had lines,' replied Mr Seagrave. 'I think Ready has both hooks and lines somewhere. Come, Juno, take up this bundle of linen to your tent: we can manage all the rest.'

'Then, Juno, you may as well take this bottle of milk, which I got for little Albert's breakfast.'

'Tankee, Massa William; dat very good of you.'

When they arrived at the tent they found that every one was awake except old Ready, who appeared still to sleep very sound. Mrs Seagrave had passed a very good night, and felt herself much refreshed. William made some touch-paper, which he lighted with one of the glasses from the telescope, and they soon had a good fire. Mr Seagrave went to the beach, and procured three large stones to rest the saucepan on; and in half an hour the water was boiling and the tea made.

CHAPTER XII.

Juno had taken the children down to the cove, and, walking out into the water up to her knees, had dipped them in all over, as the shortest way of washing them, and had then dressed them and left them with their mother, while she assisted William to get the cups and saucers and plates for breakfast. Everything was laid out nice and tidy between the two tents, and then William went and pushed Ready on the shoulder.

'Ready, have you had sleep enough?' said William, as the old man sat up.

Digitized by Google

'Yes, Master William. I have had a good nap, I expect; and now I will get up and see what I can get for breakfast for you all.'

'Do,' replied William, laughing.

Ready was soon dressed, for he had only taken off his jacket when he had lain down. He put it on, and came out of the tent; when, to his astonishment, he found the whole party (Mrs Seagrave having come out with the children) standing round the breakfast, which was spread on the ground.

'Good morning, Ready,' said Mrs Seagrave, extending her hand. Mr Seagrave also shook hands with him.

'You have had a good long sleep, Ready,' said Mr Seagrave, 'and I would not waken you after your fatigue of yesterday.'

While they were at breakfast, William told Ready how they had gone on board, and what they had brought on shore, and he also mentioned how Juno had dipped all the children in the sea.

'But Juno must not do that again,' replied Ready, 'until I have made all safe; you know that there are plenty of sharks about these islands, and it is very dangerous to go into the water.'

'Oh, what an escape they have had!' cried Mrs Seagrave, shuddering.

'It's very true,' continued Ready; 'but they don't keep so much to the windward of the islands, where we are at present; but still that smooth cove is a very likely place for them to come into; so it's just as well not to go in again, Juno, until I have time to make a place for you to bathe in in safety; but we have plenty to do before we think of that, and as soon as we can get as much as we want from the ship, we must decide whether we shall stay here or not.'

'Stay here or not, Ready!—what do you mean?'

'Why, we have not yet found any water, and that is the first necessary of life—if there is no water on this side of the island we must pitch our tents somewhere else.'

'That's very true,' replied Mr Seagrave; 'I wish we could find time to explore a little.'

'So we can, sir, but we must not lose this fine weather. It may be rough to-morrow, and then we shall not be able to get anything from the ship. We had better go now. You, sir,

Digitized by Google

William, and me. You and William can remain on board to collect the things, and I will land them on the beach for Juno to bring up.'

The whole day was spent in landing every variety of article which they thought could be useful. All the small sails, cordage, twine, canvas, small casks, saws, chisels, and large nails, and elm and oak plank, were brought on shore before dinner. After they had taken a hearty dinner they went to work again. The cabin tables and chairs, all their clothes, some boxes of candles, two bags of coffee, two of rice, two more of biscuits, several pieces of beef and pork, and bags of flour, for they could not manage to get a whole cask out, some more water, the grindstone, and Mrs Seagrave's medicine-chest were then landed. When Ready came off again he said, 'Our poor boat is getting very leaky, and will not take much more on shore without being repaired; and Juno has not been able to get half the things up—they are too heavy for one person—I think we shall do pretty well now, Mr Seagrave; and we had better, before it is dark, get all the animals on shore. I don't much like to trust them to swim on shore, but they are awkward things in a boat. We'll try a pig, at all events; and, while I get one up, do you and Master William tie the legs of the fowls, and put them into the boat; as for the cow, she cannot be brought on shore, she is still lying down, and, I expect, won't get up again any more—it is the way with those animals; however, I have given her plenty of hay, and, if she don't rise, why I will kill her, and we can salt her down.'

Ready went down below, and the squealing of the pig was soon heard; he came on deck with it hanging over his back by the hind legs, and threw it into the sea over the gunnel; the pig floundered at first, but after a few seconds turned its head away from the ship and swam for the shore.

A minute afterwards, Ready exclaimed,—

'I thought as much—we've lost him!'

'How?' replied Mr Seagrave.

'D'ye see that black thing above water pushing so fast to the animal—that's the back fin of a shark, and he will have the poor thing—there, he's got him!' said Ready, as the pig disappeared under the water with a heavy splash. 'Well, he's gone; better

Digitized by Google

the pig than your little children, Mr Seagrave. We'll go down now and tie the legs of the other four pigs, and bring them up; with what's already in the boat they will be a good load.'

As soon as the pigs were in the boat, Ready sculled it on shore, while Mr Seagrave and William brought up the goats and sheep ready for the next trip. Ready soon returned; 'Now this will be our last trip for to-day, and, if I am any judge of the weather, our last trip for some days; it is banking up very thick in the offing. This trip we'll be able to put into the boat a bag of corn for the creatures, in case we require it, and then we may say good bye to the ship for a day or two at least.'

They then all got into the boat, which was very deeply laden, for the corn was heavy, but they got safe on shore, although they leaked very much. Having landed the goats and sheep, William led them up to the tent, where they remained very quietly; the pigs had run away, and so had the fowls, but this was to be expected. The beach was quite covered with the quantity of things they had brought on shore.

'That's what I call a good day's work, Mr Seagrave,' said Ready; 'the little boat has done its duty well; but we must not venture in her again until I have put her into a little better condition.'

They were not at all sorry, after their hard day's work, to find that Juno had prepared coffee for them; and while they were drinking it they narrated to Mrs Seagrave the tragical death of the poor pig by the shark. Mrs Seagrave embraced her little boy, who was in her arms, when she heard the tale; and when she lifted up her head again there was a tear of thankfulness rolling down her cheek. Poor Juno appeared quite frightened at the danger which the children had been in, even now that it was all over.

CHAPTER XIII.

We shall, for the future, omit the regular daily routine of our party on the island, as we shall have quite enough to do to narrate the various incidents which each day brought forth.

Digitized by Google

When breakfast was over the next morning, Ready observed, 'Now, Mr Seagrave, we must hold a council of war, and decide upon an exploring party for to-morrow. The first question is, of whom is the party to consist? and upon that I wish to hear your opinion.'

'Why, Ready,' replied Mr Seagrave, 'it appears to me that you and I should go.'

'Surely not both of you, my dear,' interrupted Mrs Seagrave. 'You can do without my husband, can you not, Ready?'

'I certainly should have liked to have had Mr Seagrave to advise with, ma'am,' replied Ready; 'but still I have thought upon it, and do not think that Master William would be quite sufficient protection for you.'

'Would you go alone, then, Ready?' said Mr Seagrave.

'No, sir, I do not think that would be right either—some accident might happen. I should like, therefore, to have some one with me; the question is, whether it be Master William or Juno?'

'And which would you prefer, Ready?' said Mrs Seagrave.

'Master William, certainly, ma'am, if you will let him go with me, as you could ill spare the girl. I was only afraid you would raise some objection.'

'Indeed, I do not like it; I would rather lose Juno for a time,' replied Mrs Seagrave.

'My dear wife,' said Mr Seagrave, 'what did Ready just now say?—that we were in the hands of Providence.'

'Well, then, William shall go with you, Ready,' said Mrs Seagrave.

'The next thing is to prepare for our journey. We must take some provisions and water with us, a gun and some ammunition, a large axe for me, and one of the hatchets for Master William; and, if you please, Romulus and Remus had better come with us, and Vixen shall remain with you. Juno, put a piece of beef and a piece of pork into the pot. Master William, will you fill four quart bottles with water, while I sew up a knapsack out of canvas for each of us?'

'And what shall I do, Ready?' said Mr Seagrave.

'Why, sir, if you will have the kindness to sharpen the axe and the hatchet on the grindstone, it would be of great service,

Digitized by Google

and Master Tommy can turn it, he is such a strong little man, and so fond of work.'

Tommy jumped up directly; he was quite strong enough to turn the grindstone, but he was much fonder of play than work; but, as Ready had said that he was fond of it, he wished to prove that such was the case, and Tommy did work very hard; for Ready, who was making the knapsacks, sat by them, and when Tommy was inclined to leave off he praised him for behaving so well, and pointed out to Mrs Seagrave what a clever boy he was; so Tommy, who liked to be praised, turned the handle of the grindstone until the perspiration ran down his forehead. Before they went to prayers and retired for the night, the axe was sharpened, the knapsacks made, and everything else ready.

CHAPTER XIV.

READY was up before the sun had appeared, and he awakened William; they dressed themselves in silence, because they did not wish that Mrs Seagrave should be disturbed. The knapsacks had been already packed, with two bottles of water in each, wrapped round with cocoa-nut leaves to prevent their breaking, and the beef and pork divided between each knapsack. Ready's, which was larger than William's, held the biscuit and several other things which Ready had prepared in case they might require them; and round his waist he twisted two cords, to tie the dogs if required.

As soon as the knapsacks were on, Ready took the axe and gun, and asked William if he thought he could carry a small spade on his shoulder, which they had brought on shore along with the shovels. William replied that he could; and the dogs, who appeared to know they were going, were all ready standing by them, when Ready went to one of the small water-casks, took a drink himself, gave one to William, and then as much to the dogs as they would drink.

'Now, Master William, do you know,' said Ready, stopping after they had walked twenty yards, 'by what means we may

Digitized by Google

find our way back again, for you see this forest of trees is rather puzzling, and there is no path to guide us? Well, we must do as the Americans always do in their woods,—we must *blaze* the trees.'

'Blaze them! what, set fire to them?' replied William.

'No, no, Master William. *Blaze* is a term they use (why, I know not, except that there must be a term for everything) when they cut a slice of the bark off the trunk of a tree, just with one blow of a sharp axe, as a mark to find their way back again. They do not blaze every tree, but about every tenth tree as they go along, first one to the right, and then one to the left, which is quite sufficient; and it is very little trouble,—they do it as they walk along, without stopping. So now we'll begin: you take the other side, it will be more handy for you to have your hatchet in your right hand; I can use my left. See now—just a slice off the bark—the weight of the axe does it almost, and it will serve for a guide through the forest for years.'

'What an excellent plan!' observed William, as they walked along, occasionally marking the trees.

'But I have another friend in my pocket,' replied Ready, 'and I must use him soon.'

'What is that?'

'Poor Captain Osborn's pocket compass. You see, William, the *blazing* will direct us how to go back again, but it will not tell us what course we are now to steer.'

'I understand that very well; but tell me, Ready, why do you bring the spade with us—what will be the use of it? You never said you were going to take one yesterday morning.'

'No, Master William, I did not, as I did not like to make your mother anxious about anything; but the fact is, I am very anxious myself about one thing, and that is as to whether there is any water on this island; if there is not we shall have to quit it sooner or later, for although we may get water by digging in the sand, it would be too brackish to use for any time, and would make us all ill.'

'And where are we going to now, Ready?'

'Right to the leeward side of the island; and I hope we shall be there before it is dark.'

'Why do you call it the leeward side of the island?'

Digitized by Google

'Because among these islands the winds almost always blow one way: we landed on the windward side; the wind is at our back; now put up your finger, and you will feel it even among the trees.'

'No, I cannot,' replied William, as he held up his finger.

'Then wet your finger, and try again.'

William wet his finger in his mouth, and held it up again: 'Yes, I do feel it now,' said he; 'but why is that?'

'Because the wind blows against the wet, and you feel the cold.'

As Ready said this the dogs growled, then started forward, and barked.

'What can be there?' cried William.

'Stand still, Master William,' replied Ready, cocking his gun, 'and I will go forward to see.' Ready advanced cautiously with the gun to his hip. The dogs barked more furiously; and at last, out of a heap of cocoa-nut leaves collected together, out burst all the pigs which had been brought on shore, grunting and galloping away as fast as they could, with the dogs in pursuit of them.

'It's only the pigs, Master William,' said Ready, smiling; 'I never thought I should be half frightened by a tame pig. Here, Romulus! here, Remus! come back!' continued Ready, calling to the dogs. 'Well, Master William, this is our first adventure.'

'I hope we shall not meet with any one more dangerous,' replied William, laughing; 'but I must say that I was alarmed.'

'No wonder; for, although not likely, it is possible there may be wild animals on this island, or even savages. While I think of it, Master William, as you may have to carry one very often, never by any chance leave your gun cocked; recollect, until you want to fire, *never cock your gun*. Now I must look at the compass, for we have turned about, so that I do not know which way we are to go. All's right now—come along, dogs!'

Ready and William continued their way through the cocoa-nut grove for more than an hour longer, marking the trees as they went along; they then sat down to take their breakfast, and the two dogs lay down by them.

'Don't give the dogs any water, Master William, nor any of the salt meat, give them biscuit only.'

Digitized by Google

'But they are very thirsty; may not I give them a little?'

'No: we shall want it all ourselves, in the first place; and, in the next, I wish them to be thirsty. And, Master William, take my advice, and only drink a small quantity of water at a time: it is quite sufficient to quench the thirst; and the more you drink, the more you want.'

'But we have our axes, and can always cut down a cocoa-nut, and get the milk from the young nuts.'

'Very true; and fortunate it is that we have that to resort to; but still we could not do very well on cocoa-nut milk alone, even if it were to be procured all the year round. Now, Master William, we will go on if you do not feel tired.'

'Not in the least; I am tired of seeing nothing but the stems of the cocoa-nut trees, and shall be very glad when we are through the wood.'

Ready and William recommenced their journey.

The ground now became more undulating, although still covered with cocoa-nut trees, even thicker together than before. They continued their march, occasionally looking at the compass, until William showed symptoms of weariness, for the wood had become more difficult to get through than at first.

'How many miles do you think we have walked, Ready?' said Willy.

'About eight, I should think.'

'Not more than eight?'

'No; I do not think that, altogether, we have made more than two miles an hour: it's slow work, travelling by compass, and marking the trees; but I think the wood looks lighter before us, now that we are at the top of this hill.'

They now descended into a small hollow, and then went uphill again. As soon as they arrived at the top, William cried out, 'The sea, Ready! there's the sea!'

CHAPTER XV.

'Oh! how beautiful!' exclaimed William.

Perhaps a more lovely scene could scarcely be imagined. The

Digitized by Google

cocoa-nut grove terminated about a quarter of a mile from the beach very abruptly, for there was a rapid descent for about thirty feet from where they stood to the land below, on which was a mixture of little grass knolls and brushwood, to about fifty yards from the water's edge, where it was met with dazzling white sand, occasionally divided by narrow ridges of rock which ran inland.

The water was of a deep blue, except where it was broken into white foam on the reefs, which extended for miles from the beach, and the rocks of which now and then showed themselves above water. On the rocks were perched crowds of gannets and men-of-war birds, while others wheeled in the air, every now and then darting down into the blue sea, and bringing up in their bills a fish out of the shoals, which rippled the water, or bounded clear of it in their gambols. The form of the coast was that of a horse-shoe bay—two points of land covered with shrubs extending far out on each side. The line of the horizon, far out at sea, was clear and unbroken.

Ready cut two wide marks in the stems of the cocoa-nut trees, and then descended with William to the low ground, where they sat down to eat their dinner. As soon as their meal was finished, they first walked down to the water's edge, and Ready turned his eyes inland to see if he could discover any little ravine or hollow which might be likely to contain fresh water. 'There are one or two places there,' observed Ready, pointing to them with his finger, 'where the water has run down in the rainy season: we must examine them carefully, but not now; to-morrow will be time enough. I want to find out whether there is any means of getting our little boat through this reef of rocks, or otherwise we shall have very hard work (if we change our abode to this spot) to bring all our stores through that wood; it would take us weeks, if not months; so we will pass the rest of this day in examining the coast, Master William, and to-morrow we will try for fresh water.'

'How beautiful the corals are—look here, they grow like little trees under the water,—and look here, here is really a flower in bloom growing on that rock just below the water.'

'Put your finger to it, Master William,' said Ready.

William did so, and the flower, as he called it, then shut up.

Digitized by Google

'Why, it's flesh, and alive!'

'Yes, it is; I have often seen them before: they call them, I think, sea anemones—they are animals.'

'But what is that?' cried William, pointing to the sand—'that round dark thing?'

'That's what I am very glad to see, Master William: it's a turtle; they come up about this time in the evening to drop their eggs, and then they bury them in the sand.'

'Can't we catch them?'

'Yes, we can catch them if we go about it quietly; but you must take care not to go behind them, or they will throw such a shower of sand upon you, with their hind flappers or fins, that they would blind you and escape at the same time. The way to catch them is to get at their heads and turn them over on their backs by one of the fore-fins, and then they cannot turn back again.'

'If we come to live here, I suppose we shall catch them whenever we want them.'

'No, we shall not, for they only come on shore in the breeding season; but we will make a turtle-pond somewhere, which they cannot get out of, but which the sea flows into; and then when we catch them we will put them into it, and have them ready for use as we require them.'

They now continued their walk; and, forcing their way through the brushwood which grew thick upon the point of land, soon arrived at the end of it.

'What is that out there?' said William, pointing to the right of where they stood.

'That is another island, Master William, which I am very glad to see, even in that direction, although it will not be so easy to gain it, if we are obliged to leave this for want of water; it is, however, possible that we might.

They returned to the high ground where the cocoa-nut grove ended, and collecting together several branches and piles of leaves, made a good soft bed under the trees.

'And now we'll have a little water, and go to bed. Look, Master William, at the long shadow of the trees! the sun has nearly set.'

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER XVI.

WILLIAM slept as sound as if he had been on shore in England upon a soft bed in a warm room—so did old Ready, and when they woke the next morning it was broad daylight. The poor dogs were suffering for want of water, and it pained William very much to see them with their tongues out panting and whining as they looked up to him. 'Now, Master William,' said Ready, 'shall we take our breakfast before we start, or have a walk first?'

'Ready, I cannot really drink a drop of water myself, and I am thirsty, unless you give a little to these poor dogs.'

'I pity the poor dumb creatures as much as you do, Master Willy; if you like, we will take a walk first, and see if we can find any water. Let us first go to the little dell to the right, and if we do not succeed, we will try farther on, where the water has run down during the rainy season.' They soon came to the dell, and the dogs put their noses to the ground and snuffed about; at last they lay down panting.

'Let us go on, sir,' said Ready thoughtfully; they went on to where the run of water appeared to have been—the dogs snuffed about more eagerly than before.

'You see, Master William, these poor dogs are now so eager for water, that if there is any they will find it out where we never could. I don't expect water above ground, but there may be some below it. This beach is hardly far enough from the water's edge, or I should try in the sand for it.'

'In the sand!—but would it not be salt?' replied William.

'No, not if at a good distance from the sea-beach; for you see, William, the sand by degrees filters the sea-water fresh, and very often when the sand runs in a long way from the high-water mark, if you dig down you will find good fresh water, at other times it is a little brackish, but still fit for use.'

'Look, Ready, at Romulus and Remus—how hard they are digging with their paws there in the hollow.'

'Now you see the advantage of having kept them in pain for a few hours; it is in all probability the saving of all of us, for we must either have found water or quitted this island.'

Digitized by Google

Ready walked quickly to where the dogs continued digging: they had already got down to the moist earth, and were so eagerly at work that it was with difficulty he could get them out of his way to use his spade. He had not dug two feet before the water trickled down, and in four or five minutes the dogs had sufficient to plunge their noses in and to drink copiously.

'That is a plenteous spring, depend upon it, sir,' said Ready, as they walked back to where they had slept and left their knapsacks; 'but we must clear it out further up among the trees, where the sun cannot reach it, and then it will be cool and not be dried up. We shall have plenty of work for the next year at least, if we remain here. Where we are now will be a capital spot to build our house on.'

As soon as the breakfast was over, Ready said,—'Now we must go down and explore the other point, for you see, Master William, I have not yet found a passage through the reef, and as our little boat must come round this side of the island, it is at the point on this side that I must try to find an entrance. When I was on the opposite point it did appear to me that the water was not broken close to this point; and should there be a passage we shall be very fortunate.'

They soon arrived at the end of the point of land, and found that Ready was not wrong in his supposition: the water was deep, even close to the beach, and there was a passage of many yards wide.

'I'm quite satisfied now, William,' said Ready, 'we shall do very well, and all we have now to think of is moving away from the other side of the island as fast as possible.'

'Shall we go back to-day?'

'Yes, I think so, for we shall only be idle here, and your mother is anxious about you, depend upon it. It is not twelve o'clock, I should think. We will leave the spade and axe here, for it is no use taking them back again. The musket I will carry, for although it is not likely to be wanted, still we must always be prepared. First, let us go back and look at the spring, and see how the water flows, and then we will be off.'

As they walked along the edge of the sandy beach, they found the sea-birds hovering close to them; all of a sudden a large shoal of fish threw themselves high and dry on the sand,

Digitized by Google

and they were followed by several of a larger size, which also lay flapping on the beach, while the sea-birds, darting down close to the feet of William and Ready, and seizing up the fish, flew away with them.

'How very strange,' said William, surprised.

'Yes, sir; but you see how it is—the small fish were chased by the larger ones, which are bonettas, and in their fright ran upon the beach. These bonettas were so anxious to catch them that they came on shore also, and then the gannets picked them all up.'

They found the hole which Ready had dug quite full of water, and, tasting it, it proved very sweet and good.

CHAPTER XVII.

GUIDED by the marks made on the trees, William and Ready made rapid progress in their return, and in less than two hours found themselves almost clear of the wood, which had taken them nearly eight hours to force their way through on the day before.

'I feel the wind now, Ready,' observed William, 'and we must be nearly through the wood; but it appears to me to be very dark.'

'I was just thinking the same, sir,' replied Ready. 'I should not wonder if there is a storm brewing up.'

As they proceeded, the rustling and waving of the boughs of the trees, and ever and anon a gust of wind, followed by a moaning and creaking sound, proved that such was the fact; and as they emerged from the grove they perceived that the sky, as it became visible to them, was of one dark leaden hue, and no longer of the brilliant blue which it usually had presented to their sight.

The dogs now bounded forward; and at their appearance at the huts Mr Seagrave and Juno came out, and seeing Ready and William advancing, made known the welcome tidings to Mrs Seagrave, who, with the children, had remained within.

'I am glad that you are come back, Ready,' said Mr Seagrave, 'for I fear that bad weather is coming on.'

Digitized by Google

'I am sure of it,' replied Ready, 'and we must expect a blusterous night. And now, if you please, sir, you and Juno, Master William and I, will take the first precaution necessary, which is to go down and, between us, haul up our little boat as far from the beach as we possibly can, for the waves will be high and run a long way up, and our boat will be our main dependence soon.'

The four went down as soon as Ready had sawed the ends of the spars which had been cut off into three rollers to fix under the keel; with the help afforded by them, the boat was soon hauled up high into the brushwood, where it was perfectly safe.

'I meant to have worked upon her immediately,' observed Ready, 'but I must wait now till the gale is over; and I did hope to have got on board once more, and look after some things which I have since remembered would have been useful, and to see if that poor cow was alive yet; but I strongly suspect,' continued he, looking at the weather, 'that we shall never go on board of that poor vessel again.'

Ready, assisted by Mr Seagrave, got out some heavy canvas and lines, and commenced putting it as a double cover over the tents to keep out the rain; they also secured the tents with guys and stays of rope, so as to prevent them being blown down; while Juno with a shovel deepened the trench which had been made round the tents, so that the water might run off more easily. They did not leave off work until all was completed, and then they sat down to a late meal. During the time they were at work, Ready had made Mr Seagrave acquainted with what they had discovered and done during the exploring expedition, and the adventure with the pigs made them all laugh heartily.

As the sun went down the weather threatened still more; the wind now blew strong, and the rocky beach was lashed by the waves and white with spray, while the surf roared as it poured in and broke upon the sand in the cove. The whole family retired to bed, but, with the exception of Tommy and the children, they did not take off their clothes. Mr Seagrave threw himself down without undressing, and William, perceiving this, did the same. Mrs Seagrave, although she would not show her alarm, also remained dressed, and Juno followed her example.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER XVIII.

THE storm now raged furiously, the lightning was accompanied by loud peals of thunder, and the children awoke and cried with fright, till they were hushed to sleep again. The wind howled as it pressed with all its violence against the tents, while the rain poured off in torrents. One moment the canvas of the tents would bulge in, and the cords which held it strain and crack; at another, an eddy of wind would force out the canvas, which would flap and flap, while the rain found many an entrance. The tent in which Mrs Seagrave and the children reposed was on the outside of the others, and therefore the most exposed. It was about midnight that the wind burst on them with greater violence than before. A loud crash was heard by Ready and Mr Seagrave, followed by the shrieks of Mrs Seagrave and Juno; the pegs of the tents had given way, and the inmates were exposed to the fury of the elements. Ready rushed out, followed by Mr Seagrave and William. So strong was the wind and beating rain, and such was the darkness, that it was with some difficulty that by their united efforts the women and children could be extricated. Master Tommy was the first taken up by Ready: his courage had all gone, and he was bellowing most furiously. William took Albert in charge and carried him into the other tent, where Tommy sat in his wet shirt roaring most melodiously. Juno, Mrs Seagrave, and the little girl were at last carried away and taken into the other tent. Nothing more could be done except putting the children into the beds, and then the whole party sat up the remainder of the night listening to the noise of the wind, the roaring of the sea, and the loud patters of the rain against the canvas. At dawn of day, Ready went out of the tent, and found that the gale had spent its force, and had already much abated. He turned his eyes to where the ship had been fixed on the rocks it was no longer there—the whole frame had disappeared, but the fragments of it, and the contents of the holds, were floating about in every direction, or tossing amongst the surf on the beach.

'I thought as much,' said Ready, pointing to where the ship

Digitized by Google

had lain, as he turned round and found that Mr Seagrave had followed him; 'look, sir, this gale has broken her up entirely. This is a warning to us not to remain here any longer; we must make the most of the fine weather which we may have before the rainy season sets in—and we have no time to spare, sir, I can tell you. Let us now see what we can do with the tent, while Master William and Juno try if they can get any breakfast.'

They set to work. Ready and Mr Seagrave made it fast with fresh cords and pegs, and very soon had it all ready; but the beds and bedding were wet through. They hauled over the wet canvas, and then left it to go to their breakfast, to which Juno had summoned them.

'We need do no more at present, sir,' said Ready, 'by night time it will not be so wet, and we can handle it easier. I see a break in the sky now, which promises fine weather soon—the gale was too fierce to last long. And now, sir,' said Ready, 'we had better work hard to-day, for we may save a great many things which may be dashed to pieces on the rocks if we do not haul them on shore.'

CHAPTER XIX.

They went down to the beach. Ready first procured from the stores a good stout rope; and as the waves threw up casks and timbers of the vessel, they stopped them from being washed back again, and either rolled or hauled them up with the rope until they were safely landed.

The next morning the sun shone bright—the air was fresh and bracing; but a slight breeze rippled the waters, and there was little or no surf. The various fragments of the wreck were tossed by the little surf that still remained; many things were lying on the beach which had landed during the night, and many more required but a little trouble to secure them. There appeared to be a sort of indraught into the cove, as all the articles which had been floating out at sea were now gradually coming on shore in that direction. Ready and Mr Seagrave

Digitized by Google

worked till breakfast-time, and had by that time saved a great many casks and packages.

After breakfast they went down again to the beach and resumed their labours. 'Look, Ready; what is that?' said William, who was with them, as he pointed to a white-looking mass floating in the cove.

'That, sir, is the poor cow; and if you look again, you will see the sharks are around, making a feast of her: don't you see them?'

Ready left them at their employment, and went away for his tools to repair the boat. During this time Mr Seagrave and William had occupied themselves in collecting the different articles thrown on shore, and rolling up the casks as far as they could.

As it would take some days for Ready to put the boat into proper order, Mr Seagrave determined that he would go to the other side of the island with William, that he might examine it himself; and as Mrs Seagrave had no objection to be left with Ready and Juno, on the third day after the gale they set off. William led the way, guiding his footsteps through the grove by the blazing of the cocoa-nut trees; and in two hours they reached their destination.

'And now let us examine the spring, father,' said William, leading the way to the ravine.

The spring was full and flowing, and the water excellent. They then directed their steps towards the sandy beach, and having walked some time, sat down upon a coral rock.

'Who would have ever imagined, William,' said Mr Seagrave, 'that this island, and so many more which abound in the Pacific Ocean, could have been raised by the work of little insects not bigger than a pin's head? Give me that piece of dead coral. Do you see that on every branch there are a hundred little holes? Well, in every one of these little holes once lived a sea insect; and as these insects increase, so do the branches of the coral trees.'

'Yes, I understand that; but how do you make out that this island was made by them?'

'The coral grows at first at the bottom of the sea, where it is not disturbed by the winds or waves: by degrees, as it increases,

Digitized by Google

it advances higher and higher to the surface, till at last it comes near to the top of the water; then it is like those reefs which you see out there, William, and it is stopped very much in its growth by the force of the winds and waves, which break it off, and of course it never grows above the water, for if it did the animals would die.'

'Then how does it become an island?'

'By very slow degrees; the time, perhaps, much depending upon chance; for instance, a log of wood floating about, and covered with barnacles, may ground upon the coral reefs; that would be a sufficient commencement, for it would remain above water and then shelter the coral to leeward of it, until a flat rock had formed, level with the edge of the water. The sea birds are always looking for a place to rest upon, and they would soon find it, and then their droppings would, in course of time, form a little patch above water, and other floating substances would be thrown on it; and land birds who are blown out to sea might rest themselves on it, and the seeds from their stomachs, when dropped, would grow into trees or bushes.'

'I understand that.'

'Well then, William, you observe there is an island commenced, as it were, and, once commenced, it soon increases, for the coral would then be protected to leeward, and grow up fast. Do you observe how the coral reefs extend at this side of the island, where they are protected from the winds and waves; and how different it is on the weather side, which we have just left? Just so the little patch above water protects the corals to leeward, and there the island increases fast; for the birds not only settle on it, but they make their nests and rear their young, and so every year the soil increases; and then perhaps one cocoa-nut in its great outside shell (which appears as if it was made on purpose to be washed on shore in this way, for it is water-tight and hard, and at the same time very light, so that it floats, and will remain for months in the water without being injured) at last is thrown on these little patches—it takes root, and becomes a tree, every year shedding its large branches, which are turned into mould as soon as they decay, and then dropping its nuts, which again take root and grow in this mould; and thus they continue, season after season, and year after year, until the island becomes

Digitized by Google

as large and as thickly covered with trees as the one we are now standing upon.

Mr Seagrave then rose from where he was sitting: 'Come, William, let us now find our way back again; we have three hours' daylight left, and shall be home in good time.'

'Yes, in time for supper, father,' replied William; 'and I feel that I shall do justice to it; so the sooner we are off the better.'

CHAPTER XX.

Everything was now preparing for their removal to the leeward side of the island.

On the eighth day after the gale they were ready, and a consultation was held. It was arranged that Ready should put into the boat the bedding and canvas of one tent, and should take William with him on his expedition. Having transported this safe, he should return for a load of the most necessary articles, and then the family should walk through the grove to the other side of the island, and remain there with Mr Seagrave while Ready and William returned for the other tent; and after that, the boat should make as many trips as the weather would permit, till they had brought all the things absolutely required. It was a lovely calm morning when Ready and William pushed off in the boat, which was well loaded; and as soon as they were clear of the cove they hoisted the sail, and went away before the wind along the coast. In two hours they had run to the eastern end of the island, and hauled up close in shore; the point which ran out, and at the end of which there was an inlet, was not a mile from them, and in a very short time they had lowered the sail, and were pulling in for the sandy beach.

'You see, Master William, it is fortunate for us that we shall always have a fair wind when we come down loaded, and only have to pull our empty boat back again.'

'Indeed it is. How many miles do you think it is from the cove to this part of the island?'

'About six or seven, not more; the island, you see, is long and

Digitized by Google

narrow. Now let us get the things out and carry them up, and then we will be back to the cove long before dark.'

The boat was soon unloaded, but they had some way to carry up the things. 'We shall not mind such a gale as we had the other day when our tents are pitched here, William,' said Ready, 'for we shall be protected by the whole width of the cocoa-nut grove. We shall hardly feel the wind, although we shall the rain, for that will come down in torrents.'

'I must go and see how our spring gets on,' said William, 'and get a drink from it.'

Willy reported the spring to be up to the brim with water, and that he had never drunk any water so excellent in his life. They then pushed off the boat, and, after rowing for about two hours or more, found themselves at the entrance of the cove, and Mrs Seagrave, with Tommy by her side, waving her handkerchief to them.

CHAPTER XXI.

Old Ready had his boat loaded and had made sail for the other side of the island long before the family were up; indeed, before they were dressed he had landed his whole cargo on the beach, and was sitting down quietly taking his breakfast. As soon as he had eaten the beef and biscuit which he had taken with him, he carried up the things which he had brought, and commenced arrangements for setting up the tent, intending to await the arrival of William and Juno, that they might assist him in getting up the spars and canvas over it.

About ten o'clock William made his appearance, leading one of the goats by a string, followed by the others. Juno came after with the sheep, also holding one with a cord; the rest had very quietly joined the procession. 'Here we are at last!' said William, laughing; 'we have had terrible work in the woods, for Nanny would run on one side of a tree when I went on the other, and then I had to let go the string. We fell in with the pigs again, and Juno gave such a squall!'

'I tink 'em wild beast,' said Juno. 'Ah! what a nice place! Missus will like to live here.'

Digitized by Google

'I am thinking,' said William, 'how we are to get the fowls over here; they are not very wild, but still we cannot catch them.'

'I'll bring them with me to-morrow, Master William.'

'But how will you catch them?'

'Wait till they are gone to roost, and then you may catch them when you please.'

'And I suppose the pigeons and the pigs must run wild?'

'The best thing we can do with them, sir; the pigs will always feed themselves among the cocoa-nut trees, and will breed very fast.'

'Then we shall have to shoot them, I suppose?'

'Well, Master William, so we shall; and the pigeons also, when they have become plentiful, if we remain here so long; so we shall have some game on the island. We shall soon be well stocked and live in plenty. But now you must help me to get the tent up and everything in order, so that your mamma may find everything comfortable on her arrival, for she will be very tired, I dare say, walking through the wood. It is a long way for her.'

For some time neither of them said a word, but continued their employment, stretching out the canvas of the tent, and fastening it down to the ground with pegs. At last William broke the silence.

'Ready, did you not say your Christian name was Masterman?'

'So it is, Master William.'

'It is a very odd Christian name! You were called after some other person?'

'Yes, I was, Master William; he was a very rich man.'

'Do you know, Ready, I should like very much if you will one day tell me your history—I mean your whole life, from the time you were a boy.'

'Well, perhaps I may, Master William; for there are many parts of my life which would prove a lesson to others: but that must be after we have got through our work—not yet awhile. Now, Juno, we are all ready for you, and you may bring in the bedding. We have two or three hours yet, Master William; what shall we do next?'

'Had we not better make the fire-place all ready for cooking? Juno and I can bring the stones.'

Digitized by Google

'You are a thoughtful boy—it was what I was going to propose, if you had not. I shall be here to-morrow long before any of you, and I will take care that you have supper ready upon your arrival.'

'I brought a bottle of water in my knapsack,' replied William, 'not so much for the water, as because I want to milk the goats and take back the milk for baby.'

'Then you proved yourself not only thoughtful but kind, Master William: now, while you and Juno fetch the stones, I will stow away under the trees all the things which I have brought down in the boat.'

'Shall we let the goats and sheep loose, Ready?'

'Oh, yes—there is no fear of their straying; the herbage here is better than on the other side, and there is plenty of it. They will remain here, you may depend upon it.'

'Well, I will let Nanny go as soon as Juno has milked her; but that will be the last thing to do before we go back. Now, Juno, let us see how many stones we can carry at once.'

In an hour the fire-place was made, Ready had done all that he could, the goats were milked and let loose, and then William and Juno set off through the wood on their journey back.

Ready went down to the beach. On his arrival there, he observed a small turtle; creeping up softly he got between it and the water and succeeded in turning it over. 'That will do for to-morrow,' said he, as he stepped into the boat; and, laying hold of the oars, he pulled out of the bay to return to the cove.

CHAPTER XXII

READY arrived at the cove, and, having hauled up the boat, proceeded to the tents, where he found the whole party anxiously listening to William, who was detailing what had been done. The arrangements for the next day were made as soon as Ready joined them. They then separated for the night, but Ready and William remained until it was dark, to catch the fowls and tie their legs ready for their being put in the boat the next morning. At daylight they all were summoned to dress themselves as soon

Digitized by Google

as possible, as Ready wanted to take down the tent in which Mrs Seagrave and the children had slept. All was bustle and confusion; and as soon as Mrs Seagrave was dressed the tent was taken down, and, with all the bedding, put into the boat. As soon as they had breakfasted, the plates, knives and forks, and some other necessaries, were also put in; Ready laid the fowls on the top of all, and set off by himself for their new location.

After he was gone, the rest of the party prepared for their journey through the cocoa-nut grove. William led the way, with the three dogs close to his heels, Mr Seagrave with the baby in his arms, Juno with little Caroline, and Mrs Seagrave with Master Tommy holding her hand, and, as he said, taking care of his mamma. Ready arrived at the point, and was again on shore in less than two hours after he had set off. As soon as the boat was safe in, he did not wait to land his cargo, but going up to the turtle which he had turned the day before, he killed it, and cleaned it on the beach. He then went to where they had built up the fire-place with stones, made a fire, filled the iron saucepan full of water, and set it on to boil; he then cut up a portion of the turtle, and put it into the pot with some slices of salt pork, covered it up, and left it to boil; and having hung up the rest of the turtle in the shade, he went back to the beach to unload the boat. He released the poor fowls, who were very stiff from being so long tied by the legs, but by degrees they recovered themselves, and were very busy seeking for food.

Ready took up all the plates, and knives and forks, and small articles, examined the saucepan, made up the fire again, and then returned for the bedding and canvas of the tents, with the spars which he had towed astern. It was two or three hours before he had carried everything up, for it was a good distance, and some of the articles were heavy, and the old man was not sorry when he had finished his task, and could sit down to rest himself.

'It's almost time that they should have arrived,' thought Ready; 'they must have started nearly four hours ago; maybe not so soon—it's no easy matter to get a convoy of women and children under weigh.' Ready remained a quarter of an hour

Digitized by Google

more, watching the fire, and occasionally skimming the top of the pot, when the three dogs came bounding towards him.

'Well, they are not far off now,' observed old Ready.

This was true; in six or seven minutes afterwards the party made their appearance, so very warm and exhausted that Mrs Seagrave went into the tent with the children to repose a little, before she could even look at the place which was to be their future residence.

Here the children all fell fast asleep on the beds. They waited half an hour, and then woke Tommy and Caroline that they might all sit down to dinner.

'Dear me,' exclaimed William, as Ready took the cover off the saucepan, 'what is it that you have so good there?'

'What is it, Ready?' said Mrs Seagrave; 'it smells very good.'

'It is turtle-soup, ma'am; and I hope you will like it; for if you do, you may often have it, now that you are on this side of the island.'

'Indeed, it really is excellent; but it wants a little salt. Have you any salt, Juno?

'Got a little, ma'am. Very little left,' replied Juno.

'What shall we do when all our salt is gone?' said Mrs Seagrave.

'Juno must get some more,' replied Ready.

'How I get salt?—hab none left,' replied Juno, looking at Ready.

'There's plenty out there, Juno,' said Mr Seagrave, pointing to the sea.

'I don't know where,' said Juno, looking in that direction.

'What do you mean, my dear?' inquired Mrs Seagrave.

'I only mean, if we want salt we can have as much as we please by boiling down salt water in the kettle, or else making a salt-pan in the rocks, and obtaining it by the sun drying up the water and leaving the salt.'

'I am very glad to hear you say so; for I should feel the want of salt very much,' replied Mrs Seagrave; 'I really never enjoyed a dinner so much as I have to-day.'

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER XXIII.

Mr Seagrave was the first up on the ensuing morning; and when Ready came out of the tent, he said to him, 'Do you know, Ready, I feel myself much happier and my mind much more at ease since I find myself here, than I did before. On the other side of the island everything reminded me that we had been shipwrecked; and I could not help thinking of home and my own country; but here we appear as if we had been long settled, and as if we had come here by choice. What is the first thing which you wish we should set about?'

'I think, sir, the first object is to have a good supply of fresh water; and I therefore wish you and Master William—(here he is. Good morning, Master William)—I was saying that I thought it better that Mr Seagrave and you should clear out the spring while I am away in the boat. I brought another shovel with me yesterday, and you both can work; perhaps we had better go there, as Juno I see is getting the breakfast ready. You observe, Mr Seagrave, we must follow up the spring till we get among the cocoa-nut trees, where it will be shaded from the sun; that is easily done by digging towards them, and watching how the water flows. Then, if you will dig out a hole large enough to sink down in the earth one of the water-casks which lie on the beach, I will bring it down with me this afternoon; and then when it is fixed in the earth in that way, we shall always have the cask full of water for use, and the spring filling it as fast as we can empty it.'

'I understand you perfectly,' replied Mr Seagrave; 'that shall be our task to-day while you are absent.'

Ready then directed Juno to fry some pork in the frying-pan, and then to cut off some slices from the turtle, and cook turtle-steaks for dinner, as well as to warm up the soup which was left; and then, with a biscuit and a piece of beef in his hand, he went down to the boat and set off for the cove. Mr Seagrave and William worked hard; and by twelve o'clock the hole was quite large and deep enough, according to the directions Ready had given. They then left their work, and went to the tent, where they found Mrs Seagrave mending the children's clothes.

Digitized by Google

'There is Ready, coming round the point,' said William. 'How fast that little boat sails! It is a long pull though for the old man when he goes to the cove. Juno, is dinner ready?'

'Yes, Massa William, very soon now.'

'Let us go down and help Ready to carry up some of the things before dinner,' said Mr Seagrave.

They did so; and William rolled up the empty water-cask which Ready had brought with him.

The turtle-steaks were as much approved of as the turtle-soup; indeed, after having been so long on salt meat, a return to fresh provisions was delightful.

'And now to finish our well,' said William, as soon as dinner was over.

They rolled the cask to the spring, and, to their astonishment, found the great hole which they had dug not two hours before quite full of water.

'O dear,' said William, 'we shall have to throw all the water out to get the cask down.'

'Think a little, William,' said Mr Seagrave, 'for the spring runs so fast that it will not be an easy task. Cannot we do something else?'

'Why, father, the cask will float, you know,' replied William.

'To be sure it will as it is · but is there no way of making it sink?'

'Oh yes. I know—we must bore some holes in the bottom, and then it will fill and sink down of itself.'

'Exactly, sir,' replied Ready. 'I expected that we should have to do that, and have the big gimlet with me.'

Ready bored three or four holes in the bottom of the cask, and as it floated the water ran into it, and by degrees it gradually sunk down. As soon as the top of the cask was level with the surface they filled in all round with the spade and shovel, and the well was completed.

CHAPTER XXIV.

THE next morning, as soon as breakfast was over, Mr Seagrave observed :—

Digitized by Google

'Now that we have so many things to do, I think, Ready, we ought to lay down a plan of operations; method is everything when work is to be done: now tell me what you propose shall be our several occupations for the next week, for to-morrow is Sunday; and although we have not yet been able, since we have been cast on shore, to honour the day as we should, I think that now we must and ought to keep it holy.'

'Yes, sir,' replied Ready; 'and I would have proposed it if you had not. Now, sir, the two most pressing points, with the exception of building the house, are to dig up a piece of ground, and plant our potatoes and seeds; and to make a turtle-pond, so as to catch the turtle and put them in before the season is over.'

'You are right,' replied Mr Seagrave; 'but which ought to be done first?'

'I should say the turtle-pond, as it will be only a few days' work for you, Juno, and Master William. I shall not want your assistance for this next week. I shall fix upon some spot, not far from here, where the trees are thickest in the grove, and cut them down so as to clear out a space in which we will, by and by, build our store-rooms; and, as soon as the rainy season has gone by, we can remove all our stores from the other side of the island.'

'Now I think of it, I must return to the cove.'

'What for?'

'Don't you recollect, sir, your two-wheeled carriage, packed up in matting, which was thrown on shore in the gale? You laughed when you saw it, and said it would be of little use now; but, Mr Seagrave, the wheels and axle will be very useful, as we can make a wide path to the place when I cut down the trees, and wheel out the logs much more easily than we can drag or carry them.'

'That is an excellent idea of yours, Ready. It will, indeed, save a great deal of labour.'

Mr Seagrave and Ready then walked down to the beach, and, after surveying the reefs for some time, Ready said, 'You see, Mr Seagrave, we do not want too much water for a turtle-pond, as, if it is too deep, there is a difficulty in catching them when we want them: what we want is a space of water surrounded by a low wall of stones, so that the animals cannot escape, for they cannot climb up, although they can walk on the shelving

Digitized by Google

sand with their flippers. Now, sir, the reef here is high out of the water, and the space within the reef and the beach is deep enough, and the rocks on the beach nearly fill up that side and prevent them crawling away by the shore. We have, therefore, little more to do than to fill up the two other sides, and then our pond will be complete.'

'I see it will not be a very long job either, if we can find loose rocks enough,' replied Mr Seagrave.

'Almost all those which are on the beach are loose,' replied Ready, 'and there are plenty close to us: some of them will be too heavy to carry, but they can be brought here with the aid of handspikes and crowbars—we have three or four with us. Now, sir, suppose we make a signal for Master William and Juno, and set them to work. They may do something before dinner.'

Mr Seagrave called and waved his hat, and Juno and William came down to them. Juno was ordered to go back for two handspikes, while Ready explained to William what was to be done. Having stayed with them and assisted them for some time after Juno had returned with the implements, Mr Seagrave and Ready proceeded to the point to fix upon a spot for a garden, leaving William and Juno to continue their labour.

CHAPTER XXV.

Mr Seagrave and Ready then continued their way along the beach, until they arrived at the point which the latter had considered as a convenient place to make the garden. They found a sufficiency of mould, although not very deep; and as the point was narrow at its joining on to the main land, no great length of enclosure would be required.

'You see, sir,' said Ready, 'we can wait till after the rainy season is over before we put up the fence, and we can prepare it in the mean time, when the weather will permit us to work. The seeds and potatoes will not come up until after the rains are finished; so all we have to do is to dig up the ground, and put them in as fast as we can. We must clear away this brushwood, which will not be difficult where the soil is so light, and

Digitized by Google

sow a portion of our seeds, for we cannot make a large garden this year; but our potatoes we must contrive to get in, if we cannot manage anything else.'

'If we have no fence to make,' replied Mr Seagrave, 'I think we shall be able to clear away quite enough ground in a week to put in all that we require.'

'We had better now go on to the grove,' said Ready, 'and choose the spot for cutting down the trees. I have made my mark. There it is, about fifty yards on the side of the tent. We must walk on about a hundred yards straight into the grove.'

Ready and Mr Seagrave proceeded in the direction which the former had pointed out, until they arrived at a spot on a rising ground, where the trees were so thick that it was not very easy to pass through them.

'There is the place, sir,' said Ready. 'I propose to cut all the timber we want for the houses out of this part of the grove, and to leave an open square place, in the centre of which we will build our store-rooms. You see, sir, if necessary,—although, certainly, there is no appearance of its being likely at present,—with a very little trouble we might turn it into a place of protection and defence, as a few palisades here and there between the trees would make it, what they call in the East Indies, a stockade.'

'Very true, my good fellow; but I trust we shall not require it for such a purpose.'

'I hope so too, sir; but there is nothing like being prepared; however, we have plenty to do before we can think of doing that. Now, sir, as dinner is ready, suppose we return, and after dinner we will both commence our tasks. I like a beginning, if it be ever so small.'

CHAPTER XXVI.

THE next day, when Mr Seagrave, William, Juno, and Ready were all at work at their allotted tasks, Mrs Seagrave was sitting down at the front of the tent, the little baby, Albert, crawling close to her, Caroline trying to work with her needle, and

Digitized by Google

Master Tommy was making holes in the ground, and putting a small stone into each hole.

'What are you doing, Tommy?' said Mrs Seagrave.

'I'm playing—I'm making a garden,' replied Tommy.

'Making a garden! then you ought to plant some trees in it.'

'No; I'm sowing seeds: look here.'

'Stones won't grow, mamma,' said little Caroline.

'No, my dear, they will not; but the seeds of plants and flowers will.'

'I know that,' said Tommy; 'but I'm making believe, because I have no seeds.'

'But you said you were sowing seeds, Tommy, and not stones.'

'Well, but I pretend, and that's the same thing.'

'Not exactly, Tommy; suppose now, instead of eating those beans yesterday, you had only pretended to eat them, wouldn't it have been better?'

'I won't eat any more,' replied Tommy.

'No, not of those beans; but if you saw anything else which you thought you would like, I am afraid you would eat it, and be as ill and even worse than you were. You should never eat anything that is not given to you.'

'I like cocoa-nuts; why don't we have some to eat? there's plenty there upon the trees.'

'But who is to climb up so high, Tommy? can you?'

'No; but why don't Ready climb, or papa, or William? Why don't you make Juno climb? I like cocoa-nuts.'

'I suppose they will get some by and by, when they are not so busy, but they have no time now. Don't you see how hard they all work?'

'There's Ready coming with a bag on his shoulder,' replied Tommy.

Ready soon came up to where Mrs Seagrave was sitting, and laid down the bag. 'I've brought you some young cocoa-nuts, and some old ones also, from the trees that I have been cutting down.'

'Oh! cocoa-nuts—I like cocoa-nuts!' cried Tommy.

'I told you, Tommy, that we should have some by and by, and they have come sooner than we thought. You are very warm, Ready.'

Digitized by Google

'Yes, ma'am, replied Ready, wiping his face; 'it is rather warm work, for there is no breeze in the grove to cool one. Is there anything you want from the other side of the island, for I shall go there directly after dinner?'

'What for?'

'I must bring the wheels to get the timber out; for I must clear it away as I go, until the path is finished. I must have Master William to help me.'

'William will like the trip, I do not doubt: he must be tired of carrying and rolling heavy stones. I do not recollect anything in particular that we want, Ready,' replied Mrs Seagrave. 'There he comes with Juno, and I see Mr Seagrave has laid down his spade; so, Caroline, dear, take care of Albert while I get the dinner for them.'

Ready assisted Mrs Seagrave, and the dinner was spread out on the ground, for they had not brought the chairs and tables with them to their new residence, as they thought that they could do without them till the house was built. William reported that Juno and he would have the turtle-pond complete by the next day. Mr Seagrave had cleared sufficient ground to plant the half-sack of potatoes that they had saved from the wreck, so that in a day or two they would be able to put all their strength upon the cutting and drawing of the timber.

After dinner William and Ready set off in the boat, and before it was dark returned with the wheels and axle of the carriage, and several other articles to make up their load; they also had some thick timber in tow, which Ready said would be required for the door-posts of the house. Mr Seagrave had left his work that afternoon, and gone to the assistance of Juno, and reported that the turtle-pond, although not quite finished, was so far made that the turtle could not get out if they were put in.

CHAPTER XXVII.

'Now, Master William,' said Ready, 'if you are not very sleepy, perhaps you would like to come with me to-night, and see if we cannot turn some of the turtle; for the season is going away fast, and they will leave the island very soon.'

Digitized by Google

'Yes, I should like it very much.'

'Well, then, we must wait till it is dark: there will not be much moon to-night, and that is all the better.'

As soon as the sun had disappeared, William and Ready went down to the beach, and sat quietly on a rock. In a short time Ready perceived a turtle crawling on the sand, and, desiring William to follow him without speaking, walked softly down by the water's edge, so as to get between the animal and the sea.

As soon as the turtle perceived them it made for the water, but they met it; and Ready, seizing hold of one of its fore-flippers, turned it over on its back.

'You see, Master William, that is the way to turn a turtle: take care that he does not catch you with his mouth, for, if he did, he would bite the piece out: recollect that. Now the animal cannot get away, for he can't turn over again, and we shall find him here to-morrow morning: so we will now walk along the beach, and see if we cannot find some more.'

Ready and William remained till past midnight, during which they turned sixteen turtles, large and small.

'I think that will do, Master William, for once: we have made a good night's work of it, for we have provided food for many days. We must, however, try again in three or four days if we cannot add to our stock. To-morrow we must put them all into the pond.'

'How shall we carry such large animals?'

'We need not carry them; we must put some old canvas under them, and haul them along by that means; we can easily do that on the smooth sand.'

'Why don't we catch some fish, Ready? We might put them into the turtle-pond.'

'They would not stay there long, Master William, nor could we easily get them out if they did. We must make a pond on purpose for fish by and by: we have had no time, for other things have pressed upon us of more consequence. I have often thought of getting some lines ready, and yet the time has never come, for I feel sleepy after our day's work; but as soon as the house is built we will have them, and you shall be fisherman in chief, after I have once shown you how.'

'But the fish will bite at night, will they not?'

Digitized by Google

'Oh, yes; and better than they do in the day-time.'

'Well, then, if you will get me a line and show me how, I will fish for an hour or so after the work is done; for Tommy is always asking for fried fish, and I know mamma is getting very tired of salt meat, and does not think it good for Caroline. She was very glad when you brought the cocoa-nuts the day before yesterday.'

'Well, then, I will get a bit of candle to-morrow night, and fit up two fishing-lines. But I must go with you, Master William. We don't use much candle, at all events.

'No, we are too glad to go to bed; but there are two or three boxes of one sort and another up in the cove. What shall we do when they are all gone?'

'We shall have to use the cocoa-nut oil, and we shall never want for that. Good night, Master William.'

The next morning before breakfast all hands were employed in getting the turtle into the pond. After breakfast, William and Juno finished the pond where the walls had not been raised high enough; and, when they returned to dinner, reported that their task was completed. Mr Seagrave also said that he had, he thought, cleared quite ground enough for the present; and, as Mrs Seagrave wanted Juno to help her to wash the linen that afternoon, it was agreed that William, Ready, and Mr Seagrave, should all go down to the garden, and put in the potatoes.

Ready worked with the spade, while Mr Seagrave and William cut the potatoes in pieces, so as to have an eye in each piece; and when they had finished cutting the potatoes they went and assisted Ready in planting them and the seeds which they had brought down with them.

CHAPTER XXVIII.

THAT night Ready set up for two or three hours working by candlelight (William keeping him company), very busily engaged fitting up the fishing-lines with leads and hooks. At last two were complete.

'What bait must we use, Ready?'

Digitized by Google

'I should think that the best would be one of the fish out of the shells which are in the sand; but a piece of pork fat will, I dare say, do as well.'

'And whereabouts would you fish, Ready?'

'The best place, I should think, would be at the farthermost end of the point, where I got the boat through the reef—the water is deep there close to the rocks.'

'I was thinking, Ready, if those gannets and men-of-war birds would be good eating.'

'Not very, Master William; they are very tough and very fishy: we must try for those when we can get nothing better. Now that we have got in the seeds and potatoes, we must all set to to-morrow morning to fell and carry the timber. I think Mr Seagrave had better use the axe with me; and you and Juno can, when I have shown you how, hang the timber to the axle, and wheel it out to the place where we have decided upon building the house. And now we had better go to bed.'

William, however, had made up his mind to do otherwise. He waited very quietly till he thought Ready was asleep, as well as the others, and then went out with the lines, and went down to the beach, where he picked up three or four shells, and, breaking them between two pieces of rock, took out the fish and baited his hooks. He then walked to the point. It was a beautiful night; the water was very smooth, and the moonbeams pierced deep below the surface. William threw in his line, and as soon as the lead touched the bottom he pulled it up about a foot, as Ready had instructed him; and he had not held his line more than half a minute when it was jerked so forcibly that, not expecting it, he was nearly hauled into the water; but after a time he was able to pull in, and he landed on the beach a large silver-scaled fish, weighing nine or ten pounds. As soon as he had dragged it so far away from the edge of the rocks as to prevent its flapping into the water again, William took out the hook and determined to try for another. His line was down as short a time as before, when it was again jerked with violence; but William was this time prepared, and he let out the line and played the fish till it was tired, and then pulled it up, and found that the second fish was even larger than the first. Satisfied with his success, he wound up his lines, and, running

Digitized by Google

a piece of string through the gills of the fish, dragged them back to the tents, and hanged them to the pole for fear of the dogs eating them; he then went in, and was soon fast asleep. The next morning William was the first up, and showed his prizes with much glee; but Ready was very much displeased with him.

'You did very wrong, Master William, to run the risk which you did. You say, yourself, that the fish nearly hauled you into the water: suppose it had done so, or suppose a small shark instead of one of these gropers (as we call them) had taken the bait, you must have been jerked in; and the rocks are so steep there that you would not have been able to get out again before a shark had hold of you.'

'I was very wrong, Ready,' replied William, 'now that I think of it; but I wanted to surprise and please my mother, and I had no idea there was danger.'

'There's your mother coming out of her tent,' replied Ready. 'Good morning, madam. Do you know what William has done for you last night? Look, madam, here are two beautiful fish, and very excellent eating they are, I can tell you.'

'I am quite delighted!' replied Mrs Seagrave. 'Tommy, come here. Don't you want some fried fish?'

'Yes,' replied Tommy.

'Then look up at the pole of the tent.'

Tommy clapped his hands and danced about, crying, 'Fried fish for dinner;' and Juno said, 'Have very fine dinner to-day, Missy Caroline.'

After breakfast they all set out for the grove, where Ready had been cutting down the trees, taking with them the wheels and axle, and a couple of stout ropes. Mr Seagrave and Ready cut down the trees and slung them to the axle, and Juno and William dragged them to the spot where the house was to be built.

That night, tired as they were, Ready and William went out and turned eight more turtles. They continued felling the cocoa-nut trees and dragging the timber for the remainder of the week, when they considered that they had nearly enough to commence building.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER XXIX.

READY had cut out and prepared the door-posts and window-frames from the timber which he had towed round from the cove. He now fixed four poles in the earth upright at each corner, and then, with the assistance of Mr Seagrave, notched every log of cocoa-nut wood on both sides, where it was to meet with the one crossing it, so that, by laying log upon log alternately, they fitted pretty close, and had only to have the chinks between them filled in with cocoa-nut leaves twisted very tight and forced between them: this latter was the work of William and Juno when no more logs were ready for carrying; and, by degrees, the house rose up from its foundation. The fire-place could not be made at once, as they had either to find clay, or to burn shells into lime and build it up with rocks and mortar, but a space was left for it. For three weeks they worked very hard: as soon as the sides were up, they got on the whole of the roof and rafters; and then, with the broad leaves of the cocoa-nut trees which had been cut down, Ready thatched it very strong and securely, keeping the thatch down with the weight of heavy poles slung over the top of the roof with stout ropes. At the end of the three weeks the house was secure from the weather; and it was quite time, for the weather had begun to change, the clouds now gathered thick, and the rainy season was commencing. They had a very violent shower one day, and then the weather cleared again.

'We have no time to lose, sir,' said Ready to Mr Seagrave. 'We have worked hard, but we must for a few days work harder still.'

The earth in the inside of the house was then beaten down hard, so as to make a floor; and a sort of bedstead, about two feet from the ground, running the whole length of the house, was raised on each side of the interior; these were fitted with canvas screens to let down by night. And then Ready and William took the last trip in the boat to fetch down the chairs and tables, which they did just before the coming on of the first storm of the season. The bedding and all the utensils were now taken into the house; and a little outhouse was built up to cook in until the fire-place could be made.

Digitized by Google

It was late on the Saturday night that the family were shifted into the new house; and fortunate it was that they had no further occasion for delay, for on the Sunday morning the first storm burst upon them; the wind blew with great force, and, although they were shielded from it, still the cocoa-nut trees ground and sawed each other's stems as they bent their heads to its force. The lightning was vivid, and the thunder appalling, while the rain descended in such a continual torrent that it appeared as if another deluge was at hand.

'This, then, is the rainy season which you talked about, Ready,' said Mrs Seagrave. 'Is it always like this?'

'No, madam; the sun will shine sometimes, but not for a long while at a time. We shall be able to get out and do something every now and then almost every day, but still we shall have rain, perhaps for many days without intermission, and we must work in-doors.'

CHAPTER XXX.

When they all rose up the next morning, the clouds had cleared off, and the sun was shining bright. Ready and Juno were the first out of the house—Ready with the telescope under his arm, which he always took with him when he went his rounds, as he termed it, in the morning.

'Well, Juno,' said Ready, 'this is a fine morning after the rain.'

'Yes, Massa Ready, very fine morning; but how I get fire light, and make kittle boil for breakfast, I really don't know—stick and cocoa-nut trash all so wet.'

'Before I went to bed last night, Juno, I covered up the embers with ashes, put some stones over them, and then some cocoa-nut branches: so I think you will find some fire there yet. But next year, if we live and do well, I dare say we shall have a stack of dry fuel, and well thatched, all ready for the rainy season. I was going my morning's round, but I will stay a little and help you.'

'Tank you, Massa Ready; plenty rain fall last night.'

'Yes, not a little, Juno; you must not expect to find the water

Digitized by Google

at the well very clear this morning; indeed, I doubt if you will see the well at all. Here's some stuff which is not very wet.'

'I got plenty of fire, too,' replied Juno, who had removed the branches and stones, and was now on her knees, blowing up the embers.

'You'll do very well now, Juno,' said Ready; 'besides, Master William will be out directly—so I'll leave you.'

Ready whistled to the dogs, who came bounding out, and then set off on his round of inspection. He first directed his steps to the well in the ravine; but, instead of the gushing spring and the limpid clear water with which the cask sunk for a well had been filled, there was now a muddy torrent, rushing down the ravine, and the well was covered with it, and not to be distinguished.

'I thought as much,' said Ready, musing over the impetuous stream; 'well, better too much water than too little.' Ready waded through, as he wished to examine the turtle-pond, which was on the other side of the stream. Finding all right, he again crossed the water, where it was now spread wide over the sandy beach, until he came to the other point, where he had moored his boat, both by the head and stern, with a rope, and a heavy stone made fast to it, as an anchor.

The gale having blown off shore, the boat had dragged her moorings, and was so far out that Ready could not get at her.

'Here's a puzzle,' said the old man; 'how foolish of me not to have made a line fast to the shore. I'll not trust myself to John Shark by swimming to the boat.'

'Let me see.' Ready took the halyards and sheets belonging to the boat's sails, which he had left on the beach, and bent one on to the other until he had sufficient length of rope. He then made a piece of wood, about two feet long, fast by the middle to the end of the rope, and, after one or two attempts, contrived to throw it into the boat. The piece of wood caught under one of the thwarts, and this enabled him to draw the boat to the shore.

'Now to find the sheep and goats,' said Ready, 'and then my morning's walk is over.'

'Why, where can black Nanny be?' muttered old Ready, stopping a little while; at last he heard a bleat, in a small copse of brushwood, to which he directed his steps, followed by the dogs,

Digitized by Google

'I thought as much,' said the old man, as he perceived Nanny lying down in the copse with two new-born kids at her side. 'Come, my little fellows, we must find some shelter for you,' said he, and taking one up under each arm, he walked back to the house, and brought in the kids, followed by Nanny. Caroline and Tommy gave a scream of delight when they saw the little kids, and even little Albert clapped his hands. Directly Ready put them down on the ground, Tommy and Caroline had each of them their arms round one.

As soon as the children could be persuaded to part with the kids, Nanny was tied up in a corner, and was very content with fondling and nursing her progeny. Juno and William brought in the breakfast, and as soon as it was over, Mr Seagrave said, 'Now, Ready, I think we must hold a council, and make arrangements as to our allotted duties and employments during the rainy season. We have a great deal to do, and must not be idle. What do you think we ought to do first?'

'Well, sir, our first job will be to haul up the boat and secure her from harm; we will half-dock her in the sand, and cover her over.'

'Now, what is the next?'

'Why, sir, we must not leave the tents where they are, but take them down, and as soon as they are dry, stow them away, for we may want them by and by; then, sir, we must build a large outhouse for our stores and provisions, with a thatched roof, and a floor raised about four feet from the ground; and then, under the floor, the sheep and goats will have a protection from the weather. Then, sir, there is the fish-pond to make, and also a salt-pan to cut out of the rock; but those we must do when we have no other work. Then we have two more long jobs. One is to go through the woods and examine the stores we have left on the other side of the island, and sort and arrange them, all ready for bringing here after the rains are over; and we must also explore the island a little, and find out what it produces; for you see, sir, at present we know nothing of it.

'Come, sir, a few hours of weather like this is not to be lost, continued Ready; 'we shall have more rain before the day is over, I expect. If you please, sir, I will first go to the tent for the shovels, and take them down with me; then I will haul the

Digitized by Google

boat round to the beach and meet you there. You and Master William can take some cord, tie up a large bundle of cocoa-nut boughs, sling it to the wheels, and draw it down to the beach and meet me.'

'That will do, Ready,' said Mr Seagrave. 'Come, William.'

CHAPTER XXXI.

As so many cocoa-nut trees had been cut down to build the house, there were plenty of boughs lying in every direction, and William and Mr Seagrave had soon procured sufficient. They found, on their arrival at the beach, that Ready had brought round the boat, and had laid the rollers all ready for hauling it up. In a very short time the boat was drawn up about ten yards from the water's edge, which Ready said was quite sufficient; they then dug from under with their shovels until the boat was sunk about half down in the sand.

Having filled in the sand all round her up to her gunnel, the boat was then carefully covered over with the boughs, which were weighed down with sand, that they might not be blown away.

'I don't see why you should cover the boat up in this way, Ready; the rain won't hurt her,' observed William.

'No, sir, the rain won't do her any harm, but the sun will, when it bursts out occasionally; for it's very powerful when it does shine, and it would split her all to pieces.'

'What shall we do now, Ready?' asked William.

'Suppose, as we have two hours to dinner-time, you run for the lines, Master William, and we'll try for some fish. And as you know how to catch them, I will go up and collect wood and chips for Juno's fire.'

Mr Seagrave and William were very fortunate; before the two hours were expired they had caught eight large fish, which they brought up to the house slung on the boat-hook, which Ready had advised them to take with them to haul the fish out of the water, that they might not break their lines. Tommy halloed loudly for fish for dinner, and as they had caught so many, it

Digitized by Google

was agreed that the dinner should be put off until some should be got ready.

They had hardly sat down to table, when the rain came pattering down on the roof, and in a quarter of an hour the storm was as violent, and the thunder and lightning as terrific, as on the day before. All the out-door labour was again suspended. Mrs Seagrave, Juno, and Caroline took their work, for there was plenty to do with the needle and thread, and Ready soon found employment for the rest. William and Mr Seagrave unlaid some thick rope, that Ready might make smaller and more useful rope with the yarns. Ready took up his sailing-needles, and worked eyelet-holes in the canvas screens (which they had put up in a hurry), so that they might be drawn to and fro as required; and Tommy was given a tangled hank of twine to clear out, which, as he was tired of doing nothing, he worked at very patiently. As soon as Ready had hung up the curtains, he looked under the bedsteads for a large bundle, and said, as he opened it, 'I shall now decorate Madam Seagrave's sleeping-place. It ought to be handsomer than the others.' The bundle was composed of the ship's ensign, which was red, and a large, square, yellow flag with the name of the ship *Pacific* in large black letters upon it. These two flags Ready festooned and tied up round the bed-place, so as to give it a very gay appearance, and also to hide the rough walls of the cottage.

'Ready,' said William, after the candles were lighted, 'you once half promised me that you would tell me your history; I wish you would tell us some of it now, as it will pass away the evening.'

'Well, Master William, I did say so, and I shall keep my word.'

'We shall like to hear it very much,' said Mrs Seagrave.

'Well, madam, then you shall hear it;' and Ready then commenced his history as follows:

'My father was the captain of a merchant vessel, which traded from South Shields to Hamburgh, and my poor mother, God bless her, was the daughter of a half-pay militia captain, who died about two months after their marriage. The property which the old gentleman had bequeathed to my mother was added to that which my father had already vested in the brig,

Digitized by Google

and he then owned one-third of the vessel; the other two-thirds were the property of a very rich ship-builder and owner, of the name of Masterman. Mr Masterman, who had a very high opinion of my father, was present at the marriage, and when I was born, about a year afterwards, he stood for me as godfather. Every one considered that this was a most advantageous circumstance for me, and congratulated my father and mother, for Mr Masterman was a bachelor of nearly sixty years, without any near relations. An end, however, was soon put to all their worldly ideas, for a year after I was born, my father was drowned at sea, his vessel and the whole of her crew being lost on the Texel Sands; and my mother found herself a widow, with a child scarcely weaned, when she was but twenty-two years of age.

'It was supposed that my mother would still have sufficient to live upon, as the ship had been insured at two-thirds of her value; but, to the astonishment of everybody, Mr Masterman contrived to make it appear that it was his two-thirds of the vessel which had been insured.

'Well, sir; how far the assertion of Mr Masterman was correct or not, it was impossible at the time to say; but I do know that everybody cried out "Shame." The consequence was, that my mother had little or nothing to live upon; but she found friends who assisted her, and she worked embroidery, and contrived to get on somehow until I was eight or nine years of age.

'I was a strong, active, hardy boy, and, whenever I could escape from my mother or school, was always found by the water-side or on board of the vessels: for I took naturally to everything connected with the sea. In the summer time I was half the day in water, and was a very good swimmer. My mother perceived my fondness for the profession, and tried all she could to divert my thoughts some other way. She told me of the dangers and hardships which sailors went through, and always ended with my father's death and a flood of tears.

'Well, sir, I was little more than nine years old, when, on a very windy day, and the water rough, a hawser, by which a vessel was fast to the wharf, was carried away with a violent jerk, and the broken part, as it flew out, struck a person who was at the edge of the wharf, and knocked him into the sea. I heard the

Digitized by Google

crying out, and the men from the wharf and from the ships were throwing ropes to him, but he could not catch hold of them; indeed, he could not swim well, and the water was rough. I caught a rope that had been hauled in again, and leapt off the wharf.

'Young as I was, I swam like a duck, and put the rope into his hands just as he was going down. He clung to it as drowning men only can cling, and was hauled to the piles, and soon afterwards a boat, which had been lowered from the stern of one of the vessels, picked us both up. We were taken to a public-house, and put into bed till dry clothes could be sent for us; and then I found that the person I had saved was my godfather, Mr Masterman. The sailors took me home to my mother in a sort of triumphant procession; and she, poor thing, when she heard what I had done, embraced me over and over again.

'The next day, Mr Masterman called upon us; he certainly looked very foolish and confused when he asked for his godson, whom he had so long neglected. My mother, who felt how useful he might be to me, received him very kindly; but I had been often told of his neglect of me and my mother, and of his supposed unfair conduct towards my father, and had taken a violent dislike to him; his advances towards me were therefore very coolly received.

'Mr Masterman made but a short visit; he told my mother that he would now take care of me, and bring me up to the business of a shipbuilder as soon as I was old enough to leave school, and that in the mean time he would pay all my expenses. I must do justice to Mr Masterman; he kept his word, and sent money to my mother, so that she became quite cheerful and comfortable, and every one congratulated her, and she used to fondle me, and say, it was all through me that she was relieved from her distress.'

'How happy that must have made you, Ready,' said William.

'Yes, sir, it did, but it made me also very proud; strange to say, I could not conquer my dislike to Mr Masterman; I had nourished the feeling too long. I could not bear that my mother should be under obligations to him, or that he should pay for my schooling; it hurt my foolish pride, young as I then was; and although my mother was happy, I was not. Besides, as I was

Digitized by Google

put to a better school, and was obliged to remain with the other boys, I could no longer run about the wharfs, or go on board the vessels, as before; and thus I was deprived of all my former enjoyments. I did not see then, as I do now, that it was all for my good; but I became discontented and unhappy, merely because I was obliged to pay attention to my learning, and could no longer have my own way. The master complained of me; and Mr Masterman called, and scolded me well. I became more disobedient, and then, by Mr Masterman's desire, I was punished. This irritated me against him, and I made up my mind that I would run away and go to sea.

'Perhaps, madam, as it is our usual time to go to bed, I had better leave off now, and tell some more of my history to-morrow evening.'

'If you please, Ready,' said Mr Seagrave. 'William, my dear, bring the Bible.'

CHAPTER XXXII.

THE bleating of the kids woke them the next morning earlier than usual. The weather was again fine, and the sun shining brightly, and Ready turned out Nanny and her progeny. They had an excellent breakfast of fried fish, and then Mr Seagrave, Ready, and William went out to their work: the two first took down the tents, and spread the canvas on the ground, that it might be well dried, while William went in pursuit of the fowls, which had not been seen for a day or two. After half an hour's search in the cocoa-nut grove, he heard the cock crow, and soon afterwards found them all. He threw them some split peas, which he had brought with him, for the barley and wheat they had resolved to save, that they might sow them as soon as they had more ground cleared. The fowls, which were hungry enough, followed William home to the house, where he left them and went to join Ready and his father.

'Then, Master William, I think, now that we have spread out the tents, we will, if Mr Seagrave approves of it, all set to at once and knock up a fowl-house; it won't be more than a day's

Digitized by Google

job, and then the creatures will have a home.' Mr Seagrave assented, and they set immediately to work. There were many thin poles left, the tops of the cocoa-nut trees which had been cut down to build the house; these they nailed to the trunks of the four trees, so as to make a square, and then they ran up rafters for a pitched roof.

'Now, sir, this is only rough work; we will first put up a perch or two for them, and then close in the side, and thatch the roof with cocoa-nut branches.'

After dinner the work was renewed; Mr Seagrave collected the branches while William and Ready worked upon the sides and roof, and before the evening closed in, the fowl-house was complete. William enticed the fowls down to it with some more split peas, and then walked away.

'Now, sir, the creatures will soon find their way in; and by and by, when I have time, I'll make a door to the entrance. I think Miss Caroline might be put into authority here, and take care of the fowls and chickens when they come.'

'Yes, that shall be her charge,' said William; 'she'll be delighted when she hears that she's to be mistress of the hen-roosts. And now I think we had better roll up the canvas of the tents; we have had a splendid day, and may not be so fortunate to-morrow.'

By the time that they had folded up the canvas, and William had brought in Nanny and the kids, the sun had set, and they went into the house. Ready was requested to go on with his history, which he did as follows:—

'I said last night that I determined to run away from school, and go to sea; but I did not tell you how I managed it. I had no chance of getting out of the school unperceived, except after the boys were all put to bed. The room that I slept in was at the top of the house—the doors I knew were all locked; but there was a trap door which led out on the roof, fastened by a bolt inside, and a ladder leading up to it; and I determined that I would make my escape by that way. As soon as all the other boys were fast asleep, I rose and dressed myself very quietly, and then left the room.

'The moon shone bright, which was lucky for me, and I gained the trap-door without any noise. I had some difficulty in forcing

Digitized by Google

it up, as it was heavy for a boy of my age; but I contrived to do so at last, and gained the roof of the house. I looked round as I stood in the gutter—there were the ships in the port, and the sea in the distance, and I felt as if I was already free: I forgot that I had to get down to the ground. At last I began looking about me, to see how it was to be done, and after walking to and fro several times, I decided that I could slip down by a large water-pipe which went right down to the ground; it was so far detached from the bricks, that I could get my small fingers round it; and I was then as light as a feather, and active as a cat. I climbed over the parapet, and clinging to the pipe firmly with my hands and knees, I slid down, and arrived at the bottom in safety.

'As soon as I was landed in the flower-bed, which was below, I hastened to the iron gates at the entrance, and soon climbed up and got to the other side into the road. I had no hat, for all our hats were hung on pegs in the school-room below; but I didn't care for that. I started as fast as I could towards the port, and when I arrived at the wharf, I perceived that a vessel had her topsails loose, and meant to take advantage of the ebb-tide which had just made; the men were singing, "Yo heave yo," getting the anchor up; and as I stood watching, almost making up my mind that I would swim off to her, I perceived that a man pushed off in her jolly boat, and was sculling to a post a little higher up, where a hawser had been made fast; I ran round, and arrived there before he had cast off the rope; without saying a word, I jumped into the boat.

'"What do you want, youngster?" said the seaman.

'"I want to go to sea," said I, breathless: "take me on board—pray do."

'"Well," said he, "I heard the captain say he wanted an apprentice, and so you may come."

'He sculled the boat back again to the vessel, and I climbed up her side.

'"Who are you?" said the captain.

'I told him the same story, that I wanted to go to sea.

'"Why, do you think that you dare go aloft?"

'"I'll show you," replied I; and I ran up the rigging like a cat and went out at the top-gallant yard-arm.

Digitized by Google

'When I came down, the captain said, "Well, I think you'll make a sharp seaman by and by; so I'll take you, and, as soon as I get to London, I'll bind you apprentice. Where's your hat?"

'"I left it behind me," replied I.

'"Never mind; a red nightcap is a better thing," said the captain; and he went down to the cabin, and brought me one up.

'The ship, which was a collier, was soon out of port, and before the day had dawned I found myself on the wide ocean, which was hereafter to be my home.

'As soon as the hurry and confusion were over, I was examined by the captain, who appeared to me to be a very rough harsh man; indeed, before the day was over I almost repented of the step which I had taken, and when I sat down cold and wet upon some old sails at night, the thoughts of my mother, and what distress I should occasion her, for the first time rushed into my mind, and I wept bitterly; but it was too late then.

'I'll leave off now, if you please,' said Ready. 'Mr Seagrave,' continued Ready, 'as it is bed-time, if you please, I'll hand you the Bible. Oblige me by reading that part, "Come unto me, all ye that labour and are heavy laden, and I will give you rest."'

CHAPTER XXXIII.

THE next morning was fine, and as soon as breakfast was over, they took the wheels down to the turtle-pond, and Ready having speared one of the largest by means of a pike with a barb to it, which he had made on purpose, they hauled it on shore, slung it under the wheels, and took it up to the house. Having killed the turtle, and cut it up, Juno, under the directions of Ready, chose such portions as were required for the soup; and when the pot was on the fire, Ready, Mr Seagrave, and William, set off with the cross-cut saw and hatchets, to commence felling the cocoa-nut trees for the building of the outhouse, which was to hold their stores, as soon as they could be brought round from the other side of the island.

'I mean this to be our place of refuge in case of danger, sir,'

Digitized by Google

observed Ready; 'and therefore I have selected this thick part of the wood, as it is not very far from the house, and by cutting the path to it in a zigzag, it will be quite hidden from sight; and we must make the path just wide enough to allow the wheels to pass, and stump up the roots of the trees which we are obliged to cut down, otherwise the stumps would attract attention. You see, sir, between ourselves, it is often the custom for the natives, in this part of the world, to come in their canoes from one island to another, merely to get cocoa-nuts. I can't say that the other islands near us are inhabited, but still it is probable, and we cannot tell what the character of the people may be. We are now near the spot, sir. You see, when we have got over this hill, where the trees are so very thick, the fall in the ground will assist in the concealment of the building. I should say we are very near right where we now stand, sir, for we are two-thirds of the way down the hollow, and we have more than sufficient slope to drain off the water.'

How far are we now from the house, Ready? We must not be too distant.'

'I reckon we are not a hundred and fifty yards in a straight line, although the road will, by its turning, make it double the distance.'

'Then I think this spot will do very well; so the sooner we begin the better.'

As soon as they had planned the building, the axes and saw were in full use, and tree after tree fell one upon the other. They worked hard till dinner-time, and were not sorry at the prospect of sitting down to a rich mess of turtle-soup.

After dinner they went to their work again, and did not come in again till sunset.

'The clouds are gathering fast, sir,' observed Ready; 'we shall have rain to-night.'

'Ready,' said Mrs Seagrave, 'if you are not too much tired, perhaps you will go on with your history.'

'Certainly, ma'am, if you wish it,' replied Ready. 'When I left off, I was on board of the collier, bound to London. We had a very fair wind and a quick passage. I was very sick until we arrived in the Nore, and then I recovered, and, as you may suppose, was astonished at the busy scene, and the quantity of

Digitized by Google

vessels which were going up and down the river. But I did not like my captain; he was very severe and brutal to the men; and the apprentice who was on board told me to run away, and get into another vessel, or I should be beat all day long, and be treated as bad as he was,—kicked and cuffed twenty times a day. The men said that he did not do so to me for fear I should refuse to be his apprentice, but that as soon as my indentures were signed he would treat me in the same way. Well, sir, I made up my mind that I would not remain in the collier; and, as the captain had gone on shore, I had plenty of time to look about me. There was a large ship which was ready to sail, lying in the stream; I spoke to two boys who were at the stairs in her boat, and they told me that they were very comfortable on board, and that the captain wanted two or three apprentices. I went on board with them, and offered myself. The captain agreed to take me; and I went on shore with him, signed my indentures, and received from him a sufficient supply of clothes; and, two days afterwards, we sailed for Bombay and China.'

'But you wrote to your mother, Ready, did you not?' said William.

'Yes, sir, I did; for the captain desired me to do so, and he put a few lines at the bottom to comfort her; but unfortunately, sir, the letter, which was sent on shore by the cook, never arrived. Whether he dropped it, or forgot it till after the ship sailed, and then tore it up, I do not know.'

'Don't dwell any more upon that portion of your history, Ready, but tell us what took place after you sailed for the East Indies.'

'Be it so, if you please. I certainly was very smart and active for my age, and soon became a great favourite on board, especially with the lady passengers, because I was such a little fellow. We arrived safely at Bombay, where our passengers went on shore, and in three weeks afterwards we sailed down the straits for China. It was war time, and we were very often chased by French privateers; but as we had a good crew and plenty of guns, none of them ventured to attack us, and we got safe to Macao, where we unloaded our cargo and took in teas. We had to wait some time for a convoy, and then sailed for England. When we were off the Isle of France, the convoy was dispersed

Digitized by Google

in a gale; and three days afterwards, a French frigate bore down upon us, and after exchanging a few broadsides we were compelled to haul down our colours. A lieutenant was sent on board with forty men, to take charge of us, for we were a very rich prize to them. The captain and most of the crew were taken on board of the frigate, but ten Lascars and the boys were left in the Indiaman, to assist in taking her into the Isle of France, which was at that time in the hands of the French. I thought it hard that I was to go to prison at twelve years old, but I did not care much about it, and very soon I was as gay and merry as ever. We had made the island, and were on a wind, beating up to the port, when a vessel was seen to windward, and although I could not understand what the Frenchmen said, I perceived that they were in a great fluster and very busy with their spy-glasses. At last she came down within three miles of us, and hoisted English colours, and fired a gun. The Frenchmen put the ship before the wind, but it was of no use; the man-of-war came up with us very fast, and a shot was fired which went clean over our heads, and then they left the helm, and Jack Romer went to it, and, with my help, hove the ship up in the wind; a boat came on board and took possession, and so there was one escape at all events. When the captain of the English frigate heard how the Frenchmen had behaved, he ordered all their baggage to be examined as they came on board, taking away everything which they had plundered.

'We soon made sail for England, quite delighted at having escaped a French prison; but, after all, we only exchanged it for a Dutch one.'

'How do you mean?'

'I mean that two days afterwards, as we were rounding the Cape, another French vessel bore down upon us and captured us. This time we did not find any friend in need, and were taken into Table Bay; for at that time the Cape of Good Hope was in the possession of the Dutch, who, as well as the French, were at war with England.'

'How very unfortunate you were, Ready,' said Mrs Seagrave.

'Yes, madam, we were, and I can't say much in favour of a Dutch prison. However, I was very young at that time, and did not care much—I had a light heart. But bed-time is come, so I think I had better leave off now, if you please.'

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER XXXIV.

A HEAVY storm came on soon after they had retired to rest; the lightning was so vivid that its flashes penetrated through the chinks of the door and windows, and the thunder burst upon them with a noise which prevented them obtaining any sleep. The children cried and trembled as they lay in the arms of Mrs Seagrave and Juno, who were almost as much alarmed themselves.

'This is very awful,' said Mr Seagrave to Ready, for they had both risen from their beds. 'Merciful Heaven!'

As Mr Seagrave spoke they were both thrown back half stunned; a crash of thunder burst over the house which shook everything in it; a sulphurous smell pervaded the building, and soon afterwards, when they recovered their feet, they perceived that the house was full of smoke, and they heard the wailing of the women and the shrieks of the children in the bed-places on the other side.

'God have mercy on us!' exclaimed Ready, 'the lightning has struck us, and I fear that the house is on fire somewhere.'

'My wife—my children!' exclaimed Mr Seagrave; 'are they all safe?'

'Yes, yes!' cried Mrs Seagrave; 'all safe; Tommy has come to me, but where is Juno?—Juno!'

Juno answered not. William darted to the other side of the house, and found Juno, lying on her side, motionless.

'Help me to carry her out of the house, Mr Seagrave,' said Ready, who had lifted up the poor girl; 'she may be only stunned.'

They carried Juno out of the house, and laid her on the ground; the rain poured down in torrents.

Ready left them for a minute, to ascertain if the house was on fire; he found that it had been in flames at the further corner, but the rain had extinguished it. He then went back to Mr Seagrave and William, who were with Juno.

'I will attend to the girl, sir,' said Ready; 'go you and Master William into the house; Mrs Seagrave will be too much frightened if she is left alone at such an awful time. See, sir!

Digitized by Google

Juno is not dead—her chest heaves—she will come to very soon.'

William and Mr Seagrave returned to the house; they found Mrs Seagrave fainting with anxiety and fear. The information they brought, that Juno was not killed by the lightning, did much to restore her. William soothed little Albert, and Tommy in a few minutes was fast asleep again in his father's arms. The storm now abated, and as the day began to break, Ready and Mr Seagrave went to examine if further mischief had been done. The lightning had come in at the further end of the house, at the part where the fire-place was intended to have been made; they found that it had melted down part of the iron kettle, and, what was a greater loss, that Black Nanny, the goat, was killed—the kids were, however, unhurt.

'I think we have a large roll of copper wire, Ready; have we not?' said Mr Seagrave.

'Yes, sir, I was just thinking of it myself; we will have a lightning conductor up the first thing.'

It was now broad daylight. William went out to prepare the breakfast, and Ready procured the coil of copper wire from those stores which were stowed under the bed-places. This he unrolled and stretched it out straight, and then went for the ladder, which was at the outhouse which they had commenced building. As soon as breakfast was over, Ready and Mr Seagrave went out again to fix up the lightning conductor.

'I think, sir,' said Ready, 'that one of those two trees, which are close together, will suit the best; they are not too near the house, and yet quite near enough for the wire to attract the lightning.'

'Yes, I agree with you, Ready; but we must not leave them both standing.'

'No, sir, but we shall require them both to get up and fix the wire; after that we will cut down the other.'

Ready put his ladder against one of the trees, and taking with him the hammer and a bag of large spike nails, drove one of the nails into the trunk of the tree till it was deep enough in to bear his weight; he then drove in another above it, and so he continued to do, standing upon one of them while he drove in another above, till he had reached the top of the tree, close to the boughs; he then descended, and, leaving the hammer behind

Digitized by Google

him, took up a saw and small axe, and in about ten minutes he had cut off the head of the cocoa-nut tree, which remained a tall, bare pole.

Ready came down again, and then cut down a small pole, to fix, with a thick piece of pointed wire at the top of it, on the head of the cocoa-nut tree. He then went up, lashed the small pole to the head of the tree, made the end of the copper wire fast to the pointed wire, and then he descended. The other tree near to it was then cut down, and the lower end of the wire buried in the ground at the bottom of the tree on which the lightning conductor had been fixed.

'That's a good job done, sir,' said Ready, wiping his face, for he was warm with the work.

'Yes,' replied Mr Seagrave; 'and we must put up another near the outhouse, or we may lose our stores.'

The rain now came on again with great violence, and it was impossible to do any work out of doors. At the request of William, Ready continued his narrative.

'Well, Master William, as soon as they had let go their anchor in Table Bay, we were all ordered on shore, and sent up to a prison close to the Government Gardens.

'There were, as I told you, some other boys as well as myself, who belonged to the Indiaman, and we kept very much together, not only because we were more of an age, but because we had been shipmates so long. Two of these boys, Jack Romer and Will Hastings, were my particular friends; and one day, as we were sitting under the wall, warming ourselves, for it was winter time, Romer said, "How very easy it would be for us to get away, if we only knew where to go to." "Yes," replied Hastings; "but where are we to go to, if it is not to the Hottentots and wild savages; and when we get there, what can we do?—we can't get any farther." "Well," said I, "I would rather be living free among savages, than be shut up in a prison." That was our first talk on the subject, but we had many others afterwards; and as the one or two Dutch soldiers who stood sentry spoke English, and we could talk a little Dutch, we obtained a good deal of information from them; for they had very often been sent to the frontiers of the colony. We continued to ask questions and to talk among ourselves for about two months, and at last we

Digitized by Google

resolved that we would make our escape. We saved up our provisions, bought some long Dutch knives, tied our few clothes up in bundles, and one dark night we contrived to remain in the yard without being perceived, when the prisoners were locked up; and raising a long pole, which lay in the yard, to the top of the wall, with a good deal of scrambling we contrived to get over it, and made off as fast as we could for the Table Mountain.'

'What was your reason for going there, Ready?'

'Why, Hastings, who was the oldest, and, I will say, the sharpest of the three, said that we had better stay up there for a few days, till we had made up our minds what to do, and try if we could not procure a musket or two, and ammunition; for, you see, we had money, as, when the Indiaman was first taken, the captain divided a keg of rupees, which was on board, among the officers and men. There was also another reason why he persuaded us to go to the Table Mountain, which was, that as soon as our escape was found out, they would send parties to look for us, thinking, of course, that we had made for the interior; and we should have less chance of being retaken if we travelled after the first search was over. The soldiers had told us of the lions, and other wild animals, and how dangerous it was to travel, and Hastings said, that not finding us, they would suppose we had been destroyed by the wild beasts, and would not look for us any more.

'And now I will tell you what happened to us ere we were three hours on our journey. We ran at first until we were out of breath, and then we walked on as fast as we could—not going right up the mountain, but keeping a slanting direction to the south-west, so as to get away from the town, and more towards False Bay. We had walked about four hours, and began to feel very tired, when the day dawned, and then we looked out for a place to conceal ourselves in. We soon found a cave with a narrow entrance, large enough inside to hold half a dozen of such lads as we were, and we crawled in. It was quite dry, and, as we were very tired, we lay down with our heads on our bundles, intending to take a nap; but we had hardly made ourselves comfortable and shut our eyes, when we heard such a screaming and barking, that we were frightened out of our lives almost. We could not think what it could be. At last Hastings peeped out, and

Digitized by Google

began to laugh; so Romer and I looked out also, and there we saw about one hundred and fifty large baboons, leaping and tumbling about in such a way as I never saw; they were bigger than we were, and they had very large white tusks. Some of them were females, with young ones on their backs, and they were just as active as the males. At last they played such antics, that we all burst out into a loud laugh, and we had not ceased when we found the grinning face of one of the largest of those brutes close to our own. He had dropped from the rock above us, like magic. We all three backed into the cave, very much frightened, for the teeth of the animal were enormous, and he looked very savage. He gave a shrill cry, and we perceived all the rest of the herd coming to him as fast as they could. I said that the cave was large enough to hold six of us; but there was a sort of inner cave, which we had not gone into as the entrance was much smaller. Romer cried out, "Let us go into the inside cave—we can get in one by one;" and he backed in; Hastings followed with his bundle, and I hurried in after him just in time; for the baboons, who had been chattering to each other for half a minute, came into the outer cave just as I crawled into the inner. Five or six of them came in, all males, and very large. The first thing they did, was to lay hold of Romer's bundle, which they soon opened—at once they seized his provisions and rammed them into their pouches, and then they pulled out the other things and tore them all to pieces. As soon as they had done with the bundle, two of them came towards the inner cave, and saw us. One put his long paw in to seize us; but Hastings gave him a slash with his knife, and the animal took his paw out again fast enough. It was laughable to see him hold out his hand to the others, and then taste the blood with the tip of his tongue; and such a chattering I never heard. At last two or three at once tried to pull us out, but we beat them all off with our knives, wounding them all very severely. For about an hour they continued their attempts, and then they went away out of the cave, but remained at the mouth shrieking and howling, We agreed that we had no chance but the animals becoming tired and going away; and most anxious we were, for the excitement had made us very thirsty, and we wanted water. We remained for two hours in this way imprisoned by baboons, when all of a sudden

Digitized by Google

a shrill cry was given by one of the animals, and the whole herd went galloping off as fast as they could, screaming louder than ever. We waited for a short time to see if they would return, and then Hastings crawled out first, and looking out of the cave very cautiously, said that they were all gone, and that he could see nothing but a Hottentot sitting down watching some cattle which were browsing; we therefore all came out, very happy at our release.'

CHAPTER XXXV.

THE weather set in fine for several days after the violent storm of which we have made mention. Juno was weak and suffering for some time. She had been struck down by the lightning, but she was able to cook the dinner and do light work. Poor Juno appeared to be very sensible of the wonderful preservation which she had had from the lightning; and several times when Ready went out first in the morning, he had perceived Juno kneeling down under a cocoa-nut tree, secretly and devoutly returning thanks for having been so mercifully spared.

For a fortnight, with little intermission, the weather was fine, and during that time, Ready, Mr Seagrave, and William worked from daylight till dusk at the storehouse, which they were so anxious to complete. At last the storehouse was complete, thatched and wattled in on three sides, leaving one open for ventilation; the lower part, which had been arranged for the folding of the stock at night and during the rainy season, was also wattled in with cocoa-nut boughs on three sides, and made a very comfortable retreat for the animals. The winding path to the storehouse was also cut through the cocoa-nut grove, but the stumps were not removed, as they could not spare the time. All the stores that they had brought round were put into the storehouse, and they agreed that, on the day after the building was finished, they should all have a day's holiday. William caught some fish, a turtle was speared and wheeled up to the house; and they not only had a holiday, but a feast. Mr Seagrave and William had been walking on the beach with Mrs Seagrave and the

Digitized by Google

children, while Ready was assisting Juno in cutting up the turtle; they had shown Mrs Seagrave the storehouse, and the goats with the four kids had been led there, as there was no longer any occasion for them to remain in the house. The weather was beautiful, and they agreed to go and examine the garden. They found that the seeds had not yet commenced sprouting, notwithstanding the heavy rains.

'I should have thought that so much rain would have made them come up,' said Mrs Seagrave.

'No, my dear,' replied Mr Seagrave; 'they require more of the sun than they will have till the rainy season is nearly over.'

'Let us sit down on this knoll,—it is quite dry,' said Mrs Seagrave. 'I little thought,' continued she, taking Mr Seagrave's hand after she was seated, 'that I could have been so happy in a desert island. I thought I should feel the loss of books, but I really could not have found time to read.'

There was a silence for a few moments, when William said, 'They say that there are people who are atheists, papa. How can they be so if they only look around them? I'm sure a mere examination of the works of God ought to make them good Christians.'

'No, my child,' replied Mr Seagrave; 'there you are in error. Few deny the existence of a Deity; and an examination of his works may make them good and devout men, but not Christians. There is little merit in acknowledging what is evident to our senses; the faith required of us as Christians, and to which are attached the great and gracious promises of the Gospel, is faith in a sublime and to us incomprehensible mystery—the incarnation of the Son of God, who descended upon earth and took the form of man, and actually suffered for our redemption. Still, the visible works of the Creator prove beyond all doubt his stupendous power and his overflowing love; and, once convinced of these, we ought to be better prepared to receive those tenets of a Christian's faith, which are to us incomprehensible, but which nothing but his love to us would have suggested. What saith the Apostle? "Herein is love—not that we loved God, but that he loved us, and sent his Son to be the propitiation for our sins."'

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER XXXVI.

'Well, Ready,' said Mr Seagrave, 'after breakfast, which is to be our next job?'

'Why, sir, I think we had better all set to, to collect the branches and ends of the cocoa-nut trees cut down, and stack them for fuel; and I think, by to-night, we shall have made the stack, and so arranged it, that the rain will not get into it much. After that, as the weather will not permit us to leave the house for any time, we will cut our salt-pan and make our fish-pond. I think the strength of the rains is over already, and perhaps in a fortnight we may venture to walk through the wood, and examine what we have saved from the wreck; we shall have plenty to do in sorting and preparing the different articles before the fine weather returns, and we can then bring them round in the boat and fill our storehouse.'

'But how are we to make the salt-pan, Ready? We must cut it out of the solid rock.'

'Yes, Master William; but I have three or four of what they call cold chisels—those short, thick pieces of iron, with one end sharpened, which are in the storehouse—and with one of them and a hammer, we shall get on faster than you think; for the coral rock, although hard at the surface, is very soft a little below it.'

The whole of that day was employed in piling up the cocoa-nut branches and wood. Ready made a square stack, like a hay-stack, with a gable top, over which he tied the long branches, so that the rain would pour off it.

'There,' said Ready, as he came down the ladder, 'that will be our provision for next year; we have quite enough left to go on with till the rainy season is over, and we shall have no difficulty in collecting it afterwards when the weather is dry; this must be kept for the next rainy season.'

After supper, Ready, being requested by William, continued his narrative:—

'I left off, if I recollect right, Master William, just as the Hottentot, with the cattle under his care, had frightened away the baboons who were tormenting us. Well, sir, we came out of

Digitized by Google

the cave and sat down under the rock, so that the Hottentot could not see us, and we had a sort of council of war. Romer was for going back and giving ourselves up again; for he said it was ridiculous to be wandering about without any arms to defend ourselves against wild beasts. It would have been the wisest thing which we could have done; but Hastings said, that if we went back, we should be laughed at; and the idea of being laughed at made us all agree that we would not. The next point of consultation between us was, how we were to procure arms and ammunition, which we could not do without. As we were talking this over, I peeped from behind the rock, to see where the Hottentot might be; I perceived that he had laid himself down, and wrapped himself up in his kross, a mantle of sheep-skins which they always wear. Now we had observed that he carried his musket in his hand, and I pointed out to Hastings and Romer, that if he was asleep, we might get possession of his musket without his perceiving it. This was a good idea, and Hastings said he would crawl to him on his hands and knees, while we remained behind the rock. He did so very cautiously, and found the man's head covered up in his kross and fast asleep; so there was no fear, for the Hottentots are very hard to wake at any time. Hastings first took the musket and carried it away, out of the reach of the Hottentot, and then he returned to him, cut the leather thong which slung his powder-horn and ammunition, and retreated with all of them without disturbing the man from his sleep. Keeping our eyes about in every direction, lest we should meet with anybody else, we proceeded nearly a mile towards Table Bay, when we fell in with a stream of water. This was another happy discovery, for we were very thirsty; so we concealed ourselves near to the stream after we had quenched our thirst, and made a dinner off the provisions we had brought with us.'

'But, Ready, did you not do wrong to steal the Hottentot's musket?'

'No, Master William; in that instance it could not be considered as a theft. We were in an enemy's country, trying to escape; we were therefore just as much at war with the country as we were when they took us prisoners, and we no more stole the musket than they could be said to have stolen our ship. Am I not right, Mr Seagrave?'

Digitized by Google

'I think so: when two nations are at war, the property of either, when taken, is confiscated.'

'Well, sir, to go on: we waited till dusk, and then we continued our march towards False Bay as fast as we could. We knew that there were farmers down in the valley, or rather the sides of the hills, and we hoped to obtain, by some means or other, two muskets. It was near twelve o'clock at night, with a bright moon, when we had a sight of the water in False Bay, and soon afterwards we heard the baying of a large dog, and not far from us we distinguished two or three farm-houses, with their cattle-folds and orchards. We then looked for a hiding-place, where we might remain till the morning; we found one between some large pieces of rock. We agreed that one should watch while the other two slept: this Hastings undertook to do, as he was not inclined to sleep. At daylight he woke Romer and me, and we made our breakfast.

'The farm-house and buildings just below us were much smaller than the other two, which were more distant. In about an hour the Hottentots came out, and we perceived that they were yoking the oxen to the waggon; they yoked twelve pair, and then the Hottentot driver got in and drove off towards Cape Town, accompanied by a Hottentot lad and the big dog. Soon after that, another Hottentot drove the cows up the valley to feed; and then a Dutchwoman came out of the house with two children, and fed the poultry.

'We watched for another hour, and then the farmer himself made his appearance, with a pipe in his mouth, and sat down on a bench. When his pipe was out, he called to the house, and a Hottentot woman came to him with more tobacco and a light. About two hours after noon the farmer went to the stable and led out his horse, mounted, and rode away; we saw him speak to the Hottentot woman when he rode off, and she soon after went down the valley with a basket on her head, and a long knife in her hand. Then Hastings said it was time that we moved, for there was but one woman in the house, and we could easily overpower her and get what we wanted; still there was a great risk, as she might give the alarm. However, as it was our only chance, we resolved to go down to the farm-house very cautiously, and be all ready to seize any opportunity. We crept

Digitized by Google

down the hill and gained the fence, which was at the back of the farm-house, without being discovered; we remained there for about a quarter of an hour, when, to our great joy, we observed the farmer's wife go out of the house, leading a child in each hand. As soon as she was a hundred yards off, Hastings crept softly through the fence, and entered the farm-house by the back-door; he came out again, and made a sign for us to come in. We found him already in possession of a rifle and a musket, which had been hanging over the fire-place, and we soon handed down the powder-horns and ammunition-pouches, which were hung up at a different part of the room, away from the fire-place.

'Having gained these, Hastings set me to watch at the front door, lest anybody should return, while Romer and he looked out for something else in the way of provisions. We got possession of three hams, and a large loaf of bread as big as a small washing-tub. With these articles we made our way safe back to our retreat. As there was a sort of ravine full of rocks dividing the hill, which we were obliged to pass before we could get into the valley, unless we went down close to the farm-house, we agreed that it would be better at once to cross it during the day-time, so that we should get that difficulty over, and, at the same time, be further from the farm-house. We did so; and found a very secure hiding-place, where we lay down, waiting for the sun to set before we started on our journey into the interior. We had not been there an hour before we heard the shrill cry of our friends the baboons, on the hill which we had left; and, after that, we perceived them going down towards the farm-house, and very busy taking the fruit out of the orchard, throwing it from one to the other as fast as they could; for, you see, those cunning animals had found out that the coast was clear, and did not lose so good an opportunity. They were still busy with their work when the Hottentot came in sight with the cows; and when he approached the farm-house they all gave a loud scream, and scampered off as fast as they could. Then the Dutchwoman was seen coming back, and when she had gone into the house, and spoken to the Hottentot, we heard her crying as she came out again by the back door. About an hour before dusk, the Dutch farmer came home on horseback, and, in a few

Digitized by Google

minutes, we knew, by the shrieking and screams, that he was beating his wife; for you see, sir (that is, we suppose it was so), by her leaving the house the baboons had ventured to rob the orchard; and I have no doubt that it was taken for granted that they had carried off the different articles missing in the house; for they will take anything; so if it was unfortunate for the poor woman, it was lucky for us, as it removed the suspicion of our being there, and occasioned no search after us. I think I had better leave off now, Master William, as it is getting late.'

CHAPTER XXXVII.

THE fish-pond was commenced the next morning. Ready, Mr Seagrave, and William, went down together to the beach, and chose a spot about one hundred yards from the turtle-pond; the water being shallow, so that at the part farthest from the shore there would not be more than three feet.

'Now, sir,' said Ready, 'this is a very simple job; all we have to do is to collect small rocks and stones, pile them up wall-fashion inside, and with a slope outside, so as to break the force of the waves when the water is a little rough: of course, the water will find its way through the stones, and will be constantly changed. There's nothing like having a ready supply of provisions at all times.'

'But there are few stones about here, Ready; we shall have to fetch them a long way,' said William.

'Well, then, Master William, let us get the wheels down here, and then we can carry a quantity at a time.'

'But how shall we carry them, Ready?'

'We will sling a tub on the axle; I will go up and get that ready and bring it down.'

Ready soon returned with the wheels, and the tub slung with rope on the axle, and by that means they found that they could collect the stones very fast; Mr Seagrave and William bringing them, and Ready in the water, building up the wall.

'We have quite forgot another job which we must put in hand, sir,' observed Ready; 'a bathing-place for the children,

Digitized by Google

and indeed for us all; we shall want it when the hot weather comes on, but we will put it off till then. I can tell you, sir, that although I don't mind building this wall in the shallow water, I shall be very careful when the water is up to my knees, for you don't know how bold the sharks are in these latitudes. When I was at St Helena, not very long ago, we had a melancholy proof of it.'

'Tell us the story, Ready.'

'Why, sir, I could not have believed it possible. I did know an instance, something of the kind, when I was in the East Indies, but that was not a shark, but an alligator. A Dutchman, at Trincomalee, was standing on the beach, fishing in the harbour; an alligator swam right up to him, till his snout was within two feet of him, but the Dutchman, being on shore, did not care for him, when all of a sudden the alligator turned short round in the water, and in so doing, with his tail he tripped up the Dutchman and threw him into the water, and then laid hold of him, and dived down.'

'Well, but a shark could not do that; could he?'

'Yes, sir. Two soldiers were standing on the rocks at St Helena; the rocks were out of the water, but the swell just broke over them. Two sharks swam up to them in the same way as the alligator did, and one of them, with a blow of his tail, turning round the same way, tripped one of them off into the water, which was very deep. About a week afterwards, a schooner was in Sandy Bay, on the other side of the island, and the people, seeing a very large shark under the stern, put out a hook with a piece of pork, and caught him; they opened him, and found inside of him, to their horror, the whole of the body of the soldier, except the legs below the knees. I saw the maw and the back-bone of the animal at the barracks, and it certainly was the largest brute of the kind that I ever witnessed in my life.'

'I really had no idea that they were so bold, Ready.'

'It is a fact, I assure you, sir; and therefore we cannot be too careful how we go into the water: you saw how soon the poor pig was despatched.'

'I wonder how the pigs get on, Ready,' said William.

Digitized by Google

'I dare say they have littered by this time, sir; they have no want of food.'

'But can they eat the cocoa-nuts?'

'Not the old ones, but they can the young ones, which are constantly dropping from the trees, and then there's plenty of roots for them. If we stay long here we shall soon have good sport hunting them; for although they were tame pigs when we brought them on shore, they will be wild and very savage in a very short time. A wild boar is a formidable animal.'

'So I believe,' said Mr Seagrave: 'how must we hunt them?'

'Why, sir, with the dogs, and then shoot them. I am glad that Vixen is to pup soon; we shall want more dogs.'

'I am afraid that we shall have more mouths than we can find food for.'

'Never fear that, sir; dogs live very well upon fish.'

'We shall have some lambs soon, Ready; shall we not?'

'Yes, sir, I expect very soon. I wish we had more food for the animals, they are put rather hard to it just now; but next year, if we find more food on the island, we must keep the grass near home, to make hay and stack it for the winter-time—or the rainy season rather, for there is no winter in these latitudes. I'm pretty sure we shall find some clear land on the south of the island, for the cocoa-nut grove does not extend so close to the water on that side as it does on the north.'

After supper, Ready continued his narrative. 'We remained concealed until it was dark, and then Hastings and Romer, each with a musket on his shoulders and a ham at his back, and I, being the smallest, with a rifle and the great loaf of bread, which was slung to me by a string passing through a hole bored through the middle, set off on our journey. Our intention was to travel north; but Hastings had decided that we should first go to the eastward, so as to make what we sailors call a circumbendibus, which would keep us out of the general track. About twelve o'clock we were very much fatigued, and longed for a drink of water, but we did not find any, although the moon shone as bright as day. We distinctly heard, however, what we did not much like, the howling and cries of the wild beasts, which increased as we went on; still we did not see any, and that was our comfort. At last we were so tired that we all sat down on

Digitized by Google

the ledge of a rock. We dared not go to sleep, so we remained there till daylight, listening to the howling of the animals. We none of us spoke, and I presume that Hastings' and Romer's thoughts were the same as my own, which were, that I would have given a great deal to find myself safe and sound again within the prison-walls. However, daylight came at last; the wild beasts did not prowl any more; we walked on till we found a stream of water, where we sat down and took our breakfast, after which our courage revived, and we talked and laughed as we walked on, just as we had done before. We now began to ascend the mountains, which Hastings said must be the Swartz or Black Mountains that the soldiers had talked to us about; and when night came on, we collected brushwood, and cut down branches with our large knives, that we might make a fire, not only to warm ourselves, but to scare away the wild beasts, whose howling had already commenced. We saw two or three during the day-time sunning themselves on the flat rocks—one was a panther; we had loaded our guns: as we passed it showed its white teeth, but did not move; the others were too far off for us to distinguish what they were. We lighted our fire and ate our supper; the loaf was half gone, and the hams had been well cut into—we knew, therefore, that very soon we should have to trust to our guns for procuring food. As soon as we had finished our meal, we lay down by the fire, with our muskets loaded close to us, and our ammunition placed out of danger. It had been agreed that Romer should keep the first watch, and Hastings the middle, and I the morning; but Romer fell asleep, and the consequence was, that the fire was not kept up. It was about midnight that I was awakened by something breathing hard in my face, and just as I could recall my senses and open my eyes, I found myself lifted up by my waistband, and the teeth of some animal pinching my flesh. I tried to catch at my musket, but I put out my wrong hand, and laid hold of a still lighted brand out of the fire, which I darted into the animal's face: it let me drop directly, and ran away.

'It was a hyena. Fortunately they are a very cowardly sort of beast; still, had it not been for the lighted stick, it would have carried me off, for I was very small then. The shout I gave woke Hastings, who seized his musket and fired. As for Romer, he

Digitized by Google

never woke till we pushed him hard, he was so completely knocked up. This affair, of course, made us more cautious, and afterwards we lighted two fires, and slept between them, one always remaining on the watch. For a week we travelled on, and as soon as we were over the mountains, we turned our heads to the northward. We now were away from rocks and brush-wood, and entered a large plain. Our provisions were all gone, and we were one day without any; but we killed an antelope called a spring-bock, which gave us provisions for three or four days: there was no want of game after we had descended into the plain. I forgot to mention, however, a narrow escape we had, just before we had left an extensive forest on the side of the mountain. We had walked till past noon, and were very much tired; we decided upon taking our dinner under a large tree, and we threw ourselves down in the shade. Hastings was lying on his back, with his eyes looking upwards, when he perceived on a lower branch of the tree a panther, which lay along it, his green eyes fixed upon us, and ready to spring: he seized his musket and fired it without taking aim, for there was no time; but the ball entered the stomach of the animal, and, as it appeared, divided its back-bone. Down came the beast, within three or four feet of where we lay, with a loud roar, and immediately crouched to spring upon Romer; but it could not, the back-bone being broken. I never saw such rage and fury in an animal in my life. At first we were too much frightened to fire; but, perceiving that the beast could not spring, Hastings snatched the musket from Romer, and shot it through the head. We were now obliged to hunt for our livelihood, and we became bolder than ever. Our clothes were all in rags; but we had plenty of powder and ammunition; there were hundreds and hundreds of antelopes and gnus in the plain—indeed, sometimes it was impossible to count them. We didn't want for provisions, I assure you; but this plentiful supply of game was the cause of our being in greater danger, for now, for the first time, we heard the roar of the lions every night. Of all the noises I ever heard, it is certainly the one which, to my mind, is the most terrible.'

'Did you ever meet with one in the daytime?' said William.

'Yes, sir; we often saw them, but they never attacked us, and we were too much afraid to fire at them. Once we met one face

Digitized by Google

to face. We had killed an antelope called a hartebeest, and with our muskets on our shoulders, were running to secure it, having marked were it fell in the high grass. Just as we came up to the spot of grass, we heard a roar, and found ourselves not ten yards from a lion, who was lying on the top of the beast we had killed, his eyes flashing fire at us, and half raising himself, as if ready for a spring. We all took to our heels as fast as we could. I never looked back till I was out of breath: but the lion was content with our running away, and did not take the trouble to follow us. Well, sir, we had been travelling, we really hardly knew where, but certainly in a northerly direction, for three weeks, and were quite worn out. We walked along the whole day without speaking to one another, except when it was necessary to hunt for provisions; for my part, I declare that I was willing to lie down and die, if I could have so done, and I became quite indifferent to the roaring of the lions, and felt as if I should be glad if one would have made a meal of me; when one morning we fell in with a party of natives. They were of the Karroo tribe, as they told us by pointing to themselves, and saying, "Karroos;" and then they pointed to us and said, "Dutch." We shot game and gave it to them, which pleased them very much, and they remained with us for five or six days. We tried by signs to inquire of them, if there were any Dutch settlements about there; and they understood us, and said that there were, in a direction which they pointed out to us, to the north-east. We offered them a present if they would show us the way. Two of the men agreed to go with us; the rest of the tribe, with the women and children, went southward. The next day we arrived at a Dutch settlement of three or four farm-houses, called Graef Reynets;—but I must leave off now, for it is past bed-time.'

CHAPTER XXXVIII.

THE construction of the fish-pond proceeded rapidly, and on the third day it was nearly complete. As soon as all the walls were finished, Ready threw out sand and shingle, so as to make the part next to the beach nearly as deep as the other; so that

Digitized by Google

there might be sufficient water to prevent the gulls and man-of-war birds from darting down and striking the fish. While Ready was thus employed, Mr Seagrave and William collected more rocks, so as to divide the pond into four parts, at the same time allowing a communication between each part. These inside walls, as well as the outside, were made of sufficient width to walk upon; by which means they would have all the fish within reach of the spear. The day after the pond was completed, the weather changed, but the storms were not so violent as at the commencement of the rainy season. The rain poured down with great force, but it was not accompanied with such terrific thunder and lightning, nor were the storms of so long continuance, generally clearing up after a few hours. In the intervals of fine weather they caught a great many fish, which they put into the pond, so that it was well stocked. But a circumstance occurred, which was the occasion of great alarm to them all; which was, that one evening William was taken with a shivering, and complained very much of a pain in his head. He was put into bed, and the next morning he was in a violent fever. Mr Seagrave was much alarmed, as the symptoms were worse every hour; and Ready, who had sat up with him during the night, called Mr Seagrave out of the house, and said, 'This is a bad case, sir: Master William was working yesterday with his hat off, and I fear that he has been struck by the sun. It's a pity but we had some one who could take some blood from him.'

'I have a lancet,' said Mr Seagrave; 'but I really have never bled anybody in my life.'

'Nor have I, sir; but if you have a lancet, I think it is our duty to try. If you think that you cannot, I will do my best; it is a very simple operation.'

They went into the house again. Mr Seagrave found his lancet, and Ready bound up William's arm. As soon as the vein was swelled, he held it firm under the ball of his thumb, and was successful in the first attempt. By the advice of Ready, a great deal of blood was taken from the sufferer, who appeared to be much relieved by the operation. His arm was then bandaged, and having drunk a little water, which he asked for, he again was laid upon his pillow. The next day the fever was as violent

Digitized by Google

as ever. William was bled again, and his mother watched over him with anxiety and in tears.

Ready, who could not be idle, had taken the hammer and cold chisel to make the salt-pan, at which he worked during those portions of the day in which his services were not required indoors; and as he sat chipping away the rock, his thoughts were ever upon William, and the tears would run down his cheeks as he offered up his petition to the Almighty, that the boy might be spared to his afflicted parents. And those prayers were heard, for, on the ninth day, William was pronounced by Ready and Mr Seagrave to have much less fever, and shortly afterwards it left him altogether; but it was not till more than a fortnight after the fever had left him that he could go out of the house. The joy that was expressed by them all when the change took place may be imagined: nor were the thanksgivings less fervent than had been the prayers. During his convalescence, as there was nothing else to do, Mr Seagrave and Ready, who now went gladly to their work, determined, as the salt-pan was finished, that they would make a bathing-place. Juno came to their assistance, and was very useful in assisting to drag the wheels which brought the rocks and stones, while Mrs Seagrave and Caroline watched the invalid. By the time that William was able to go out of the house, the bathing-place was finished, and there was no longer any fear of the sharks.

'It's a long while since you have gone on with your story, Ready,' said William, after they had taken their supper; 'I wish you would do so now, as I am sure I shall not be tired.'

'With pleasure, Master William,' replied Ready; 'but can you remember where I left off, for my memory is none of the best?'

'O yes; if you recollect, you had just arrived at a Dutch farmer's house, in company with the savages, at a place called Graef Reynets, I think.'

'Very true, sir. Well, then, the Dutch farmer came out when he saw us coming, and asked us who we were. We told him that we were English prisoners, and that we wished to give ourselves up to the authorities. He took away our arms and ammunition, and said that he was the authority in that part. He

Digitized by Google

added, "As for sending you to the Cape, that I may not be able to do for months; so if you wish to be fed well, you must work well while you're here." We replied, that we should be very glad to make ourselves useful, and then he sent us some dinner, by a Hottentot girl, and showed us a small room for us to sleep in. But we soon found out that we had to deal with an ill-tempered, brutal fellow; and that he gave us plenty of hard work, but by no means plenty of food. He would not trust us with guns, so the Hottentots went out with the cattle, but he gave us plenty of work to do about the house; and at last he treated us very cruelly. When he was short of provisions for the Hottentots and other slaves, of whom he had a good many, he would go out with the other farmers who lived near him, and shoot quaggas for them to eat.'

'What is a quagga?'

'A wild ass, partly covered with stripes, but not so much as the zebra; a pretty animal to look at, but the flesh is very bad. Well, sir, he at last would give us nothing to eat but quaggas, the same as the Hottentots, while he and his family—for he had a wife and five children—lived upon mutton and the flesh of the antelope, which is very excellent eating. We asked him to allow us a gun to procure better food, and he kicked Romer so unmercifully, that he could not work for two days afterwards. As for the poor Hottentots and slaves, they were flogged every day with a whip made of the hide of a rhinoceros, a terrible thing, which cut into the flesh at every blow. Our lives became quite a burden to us. At last we agreed that we would stand it no longer, and one evening Hastings told him so. This put him into a great rage, and he called two of the slaves, and ordered them to tie him to the waggon-wheel, swearing that he would cut every bit of skin off his body, and he went into his house to get his whip. The slaves had hold of Hastings, and were tying him up, for they dared not disobey their master, when he said to us, "If I am flogged this way, it will be all over with us. Now's your time; run back behind the house, and when he comes out with the whip, do you go in and seize the muskets, which are always ready loaded. Hold him at bay till I get clear, and then we will get away somehow or another. You must do it, for I am sure he will flog me till I am dead, and he will shoot you

Digitized by Google

as runaway prisoners, as he did his two Hottentots the other day." As Romer and I thought this very probable, we did as Hastings told us; and when the Dutchman had gone towards him where he was tied up, about fifty yards from the house, we went in. The farmer's wife was in bed, having just given birth to another child, and the children we cared not for. We seized two muskets and a large knife, and came out just as the Dutchman had struck the first blow with the rhinoceros whip, which was so severe that it took away poor Hastings' breath. We went up; he turned round and saw us: we levelled our muskets at him. When we came up, Romer kept his piece levelled at the Dutchman, while I passed him, and with the knife cut the thongs which bound Hastings. The Dutchman turned pale and did not speak, he was so frightened, and the slaves ran away. As soon as Hastings was free, he seized a large wooden mallet, used for driving in stakes, and struck the Dutchman down to the earth, crying out, "That, for flogging an Englishman, you rascal." While the man lay senseless or dead—I didn't know which at the time—we tied him to the waggon-wheels, and returning to the house, seized some ammunition and other articles which might be useful. We then went to the stables, and took the three best horses which the Dutchman had, put some corn in a sack for each of them, took some cord for halters, mounted, and rode away as fast as we could. As we knew that we should be pursued, we first galloped away as if we were going eastward, to the Cape; and then, as soon as we were on ground which would not show the tracks of our horses' hoofs, we turned round to the northward, in the direction of the Bushman country. It was dark soon after we had altered our course; but we travelled all night, and although we heard the roaring of the lions at a distance, we met with no accident.'

'How long were you with the farmer at Graef Reynets?'

'Nearly eight months, sir; and during that time we could not only speak Dutch, but we could make ourselves understood by the Hottentots and other natives; besides which, we had a good knowledge of the country, and knew what to do when we travelled. While we were eating next morning, we held a consultation how we should proceed. We were aware that the Dutchmen would shoot us if they came up with us, and that

Digitized by Google

they would come out in strong force against us; and we were afraid that we had killed the man, and if so, they would hang us as soon as we got to the Cape; so we were at a great loss to know how to act. At last we decided that we would cross the country of the Bushmen, and get to the seaside, to the northward of the Cape. Having done talking, we took the saddles off our horses, and tethered them where there was good grass; for you see, sir, if we had not made them fast they would have galloped back to the farm. We determined that it would be better to travel at night, as there would be less fear of the wild beasts, or of being seen; so we went fast asleep for many hours. I won't tell what passed every day for a fortnight, by which time we had pretty well killed our horses, and we were compelled to stop among a tribe of Gorraguas, I think they called them, a very mild, inoffensive people, who supplied us with milk, and treated us very kindly. We had some adventures, nevertheless. One day, as we were passing by a tuft of small trees, a rhinoceros charged upon my horse, which very narrowly escaped by wheeling short round and getting behind him; the beast then made off without meddling with us any more. Every day we used to shoot some animal or other for provision: sometimes it was a gnu, a very curious creature, something between an antelope and a bull; at other times it was one of the antelope kind.

'Well, we staid for three weeks with these people, and gave our horses time to refresh themselves; and then we set off again, keeping more towards the coast as we went southward, for the Gorraguas told us that there was a fierce native tribe, called Kaffers, to the northward, who would certainly kill us if we went there. The fact is, we did not know what to do. At last we decided that it would be better to find our way back to the Cape, and deliver ourselves up as prisoners. All that we were afraid of was, that we had killed the Dutch farmer at Graef Reynets, who had treated us so brutally; but Hastings said he did not care; that was his business, and he would take his chance: so when we bade adieu to the Gorraguas, who were quite satisfied with our presenting them with all the buttons we could spare, we turned our horses' heads to the south-east, so to make the sea and go to the southward at the same time.

'I have now to mention a most melancholy event which

Digitized by Google

occurred. Two days after we had recommenced our travels, in passing through some high grass, we stumbled on a lion, which was devouring a gnu. Romer, who happened to be some ten yards foremost of the three, was so alarmed that he fired at the animal. The lion was slightly wounded; he gave a roar that might have been heard for a mile, sprang upon Romer, and with one blow of his paw knocked him off the saddle into the bushes. Our horses, which were frightened, wheeled round and fled, for the animal was evidently about to attack us. As it was, he did make one bound in our direction; we could not pull up until we had gone half a mile; and when we did, we saw the lion had torn down the horse which Romer had ridden, and was dragging away the carcase to the right at a sort of canter, without any apparent effort on his part. We waited till he was well off, and then rode back to the spot where Romer had fallen; we soon found him, but he was quite dead; the blow with the lion's paw had fractured his skull.

'We had no means of burying him, poor fellow! so we covered him up with bushes, and left him. We were both very melancholy; indeed, as I rode on, I cried for nearly an hour; and Hastings never spoke a word until it was time for us to rest the horses. Three days after poor Romer's death we first saw the wide ocean again; and it appeared to us as if we had fallen in with an old friend. We kept near the coast, but we soon found out that we could not obtain the supply of game, or fuel for our fires at night, so well as we could in the interior, and we agreed to get away from the coast again. We had a dreary plain to pass over, and we were quite faint for want of food—for we had been without any for nearly two days—when we came upon an ostrich, and, to my great joy, I discovered his nest with thirteen large eggs in it. We sat down, lighted a fire, and roasted two of the eggs: we made a good dinner of them, and having put four more on our saddle-bows, we continued our journey. For three weeks more we had nothing but difficulty and suffering. One forenoon, at last, we saw the Table Mountain, and were as glad to see it as if we had seen the white cliffs of Old England. We pushed on our horses, with the hopes of being once more comfortably in prison before night; when, as we neared the bay, we observed that English colours

Digitized by Google

were flying on board of the vessels in the road. This surprised us very much; but soon after that we met an English soldier, who told us that the Cape had been taken by our forces more than six months ago. We rode into the town, and reported ourselves to the main-guard; the governor sent for us, heard our story, and sent us to the admiral, who took us on board of his own ship. Now, Master William, as this is a good place to leave off at, and you must be rather tired, I think we had better all go to bed.'

CHAPTER XXXIX.

NEXT day after supper Ready went on with his narrative.

'I left off at the time that I was sent on board of the man-of-war, and I was put down on the books as a supernumerary boy. I was on board of her for nearly four years, and we were sent about from port to port, and from clime to clime, until I grew a strong, tall lad, and was put into the mizen-top. I found it very comfortable. I did my duty, and the consequence was, I never was punished; and the duty was not very hard either; not like on board of the merchant vessels, where there are so few hands—there it is hard work. Of course, there are some captains who command men-of-war who are harsh and severe—what they call martinets in the service; but it was my good fortune to be with a very mild and steady captain, who was very sorry when he was obliged to punish the men, although he would not overlook any improper conduct. The only thing which was a source of constant unhappiness to me was that I could not get to England again, and see my mother. I had written two or three letters, but never had an answer; and at last I became so impatient that I determined to run away the very first opportunity which might offer. We were then stationed in the West Indies, and I had very often consultations with Hastings on the subject, and we had agreed that we would start off together the very first opportunity. At last we anchored in Port Royal, Jamaica, and there was a large convoy of West India ships, laden with sugar, about to sail immediately. We

Digitized by Google

knew that if we could get on board of one they would secrete us until the time of sailing, for they were short-handed enough, the men-of-war having pressed every man they could lay their hands upon. There was but one chance, and that was by swimming on board of one of the vessels during the night-time, and that was easy enough, as they were anchored not a hundred yards from our own ship. What we were afraid of were the sharks, which were so plentiful in the harbour. However, the night before the convoy was to sail we made up our minds that we would run the risk, for we were so impatient to escape that we did not care for anything. It was in the middle watch—I recollect it, and shall recollect it all my life, as if it were last night—that we lowered ourselves down very softly from the bows of the ship, and as soon as we were in the water we struck out for one of the West-Indiamen close to us. The sentry at the gangway saw the light in the water made by our swimming through it, and he hailed, of course: we gave no answer, but swam as fast as we could; for, after he had hailed we heard a bustle, and we knew that the officer of the watch was manning a boat to send after us. I had just caught hold of the cable of the West-Indiaman, and was about to climb up by it, for I was a few yards before Hastings, when I heard a loud shriek, and, turning round, perceived a shark plunging down with Hastings in his jaws. I was so frightened that for a short time I could not move: at last I recovered myself, and began to climb up by the cable as fast as I could. I was just in time, for another shark made a rush at me; and although I was clear out of the water more than two feet, he sprang up and just caught my shoe by the heel, which he took down with him. Fear gave me strength, and in a second or two afterwards I was up at the hawseholes, and the men on board, who had been looking over the bows, and had witnessed poor Hastings' death, helped me on board, and hurried me down below, for the boat from our ship was now nearly alongside. When the officer of the boat came on board, they told him they had perceived us both in the water, close to their vessel, and that the sharks had taken us down. As the shriek of Hastings was heard by the people in the boat, the officer believed that it was the case, and returned to the ship. I heard the drum beat to quarters on board of the

Digitized by Google

man-of-war, that they might ascertain who were the two men who had attempted to swim away, and a few minutes afterwards they beat the retreat, having put down D. D. against my name on the books, as well as against that of poor Hastings.'

'What does D. D. mean?'

'D. stands for discharged from the service; D. D. stands for dead. I can hardly describe my sensations for some hours afterwards. I tried to sleep, but could not—I was in agony. The moment I slumbered, I thought the shark had hold of me, and I would start up and shriek; and then I said my prayers and tried to go to sleep again, but it was of no use. The captain of the West-Indiaman was afraid that my shrieks would be heard, and he sent me down a tumbler of rum to drink off; this composed me, and at last I fell into a sound sleep. When I awoke I found that the ship was underweigh and with all canvas set, surrounded by more than a hundred other vessels; the men-of-war who took charge of the convoy firing guns and making signals incessantly. It was a glorious sight, and we were bound for Old England. I felt so happy, that I thought I would risk the jaws of another shark to have regained my liberty.

'I am afraid that your miraculous escape did you very little good, Ready,' observed Mrs Seagrave, 'if you got over it so soon.'

'Indeed, madam, it was not so. I can honestly say that I was a better and more serious person; not but what I am bad enough and a sinful creature now, but I was from that day better than I was before. The very next night, when I was in my hammock, I prayed very fervently; and there happened to be a very good old Scotchman on board, the second mate, who talked very seriously to me, and pointed out how wonderful had been my preservation, and I felt it. It was he who first read the Bible with me, and made me understand it, and, I may say, become fond of it. I did my duty on our passage home as a seaman before the mast, and the captain was pleased with me. I had told the history of my life to the second mate, and he pointed out to me how foolish and wrong I had been to leave my mother, and refuse the assistance of Mr Masterman. The ship I was in was bound to Glasgow, and we parted company with the convoy at North Foreland, and arrived safe in port. The captain took me to the owners, who paid me fifteen guineas for my services

Digitized by Google

during the voyage home; and as soon as I received the money I set off for Newcastle as fast as I could. I had taken a place on the outside of the coach, and I entered into conversation with a gentleman who sat next to me. I soon found out that he belonged to Newcastle, and I first inquired if Mr Masterman, the ship-builder, was still alive. He told me that he had been dead about three months. "And to whom did he leave his money?" I asked. "He had no relations," replied the gentleman, "and he left all his money to build an hospital and almshouses. He had a partner in his business latterly, and he left the yard and all the stores to him, I believe, because he did not know whom to leave it to. There was a lad whom I knew for certain he intended to have adopted and to have made his heir—a lad of the name of Ready; but he ran away to sea, and has never been heard of since. Foolish boy that he was, he might now have been a man of fortune."

'"Very foolish, indeed," replied I.

'"Yes; but he has harmed more than himself. His poor mother, who doted upon him, as soon as she heard that he was lost, pined away by degrees, and"—

'"You don't mean to say that she is dead?" interrupted I, seizing the gentleman by the arm.

'"Yes," replied he, looking at me with surprise; "she died last year of a broken heart."

'I fell back on the luggage behind me, and should have fallen off the coach if the gentleman had not held me. He called to the coachman to pull up the horses, and they took me down, and put me inside; fortunately there was no one there, and as the coach rolled on I cried as if my heart would break.'

Ready appeared so very much affected that Mr Seagrave proposed that he should leave off his history for the present, and that they should retire to rest.

CHAPTER XL.

A FEW days afterwards Ready continued his narrative.

'I told you, Master William, that I was informed by the gentle-

Digitized by Google

man on the coach that my mother had died of a broken heart, in consequence of my supposed death. I was in an agony until I arrived at Newcastle, where I could ascertain all the facts connected with her decease. When the coach stopped, the gentleman, who had remained outside, came to the coach door, and said to me, "If I mistake not, you are Masterman Ready, who ran away to sea; are you not?" "Yes, sir," replied I, very sorrowfully, "I am." "Well, my man," said he, "cheer up; when you went away you were young and thoughtless, and certainly had no idea that you would have distressed your poor mother as you did. It was not your going to sea, but the report of your death, which preyed so much upon her mind; and that was not your fault. You must come with me, as I have something to say to you."

"I will call upon you to-morrow, sir," replied I; "I cannot do anything until I talk to the neighbours and visit my poor mother's grave. The gentleman gave me his address, and I promised to call upon him the next morning. I then went to the house my mother used to live in. I knew that she was not there; yet I was disappointed and annoyed when I heard merry laughter within. I looked in, for the door was open: two women cried out to me, "What do you want?" and laughed at me. I turned away in disgust, and went to a neighbouring cottage, the inmates of which had been very intimate with my mother. I found the wife at home, but she did not know me; and I told her who I was. She had attended my mother during her illness, till the day of her death; and she told me all I wished to know. It was some little relief to my mind to hear that my poor mother could not have lived, as she had an incurable cancer; but at the same time the woman told me that I was ever in her thoughts, and that my name was the last word on her lips. She also said that Mr Masterman had been very kind to my mother, and that she had wanted nothing. I then asked her to show me where my mother had been buried. She put on her bonnet and led me to the grave, and then, at my request, she left me. I seated myself down by the mound of turf which covered her, and long and bitterly did I weep her loss and pray for forgiveness.

'It was quite dark when I left the spot and went back to the cottage of the kind woman who had attended my mother. I conversed with her and her husband till late, and then, as they

Digitized by Google

offered me a bed, I remained with them that night. Next morning I went to keep my appointment with the gentleman whom I had met in the coach: I found by the brass plate on the door that he was a lawyer. He desired me to sit down, and then he closed the door carefully, and having asked me many questions to ascertain if I was really Masterman Ready, he said he was the person employed at Mr Masterman's death, and that he had found a paper which was of great consequence, as it proved that the insurance of the vessel, which had belonged to my father and Mr Masterman, and which had been lost, had not been made on Mr Masterman's share only, but upon my father's as well, and that Mr Masterman had defrauded my mother. He said he had found the paper in a secret drawer some time after Mr Masterman's death, and that my mother being dead, and I being supposed to be dead, he did not see any use in making known so disagreeable a circumstance; but that, now I had re-appeared, it was his duty so to do, and that he would arrange the matter for me, if I pleased, with the corporation of the town, to whom all Mr Masterman's property had been left in trust to build an hospital and almshouses. He said that the insurance on the vessel was three thousand pounds, and that one-third of the vessel belonged to my father, so that a thousand pounds were due to him, which the interest for so many years would increase to above two thousand pounds. This was good news for me, and you may suppose I readily agreed to all he proposed. He set to work at once, and having called together the mayor and corporation of the town, and proved the document, they immediately agreed that I was entitled to the money, and that it should be paid to me without any contest.

'As soon as the money was in my own hands, I began to squander it away in all manner of folly. Fortunately, I had not received it more than ten days when the Scotch second mate came like a guardian angel to save me. As soon as I had made known to him what had taken place, he proposed that I should purchase a part of a vessel, on condition that I was captain of her. I liked this idea very much, and being convinced that I had been making a fool of myself, I resolved to take his advice; but one thing only restrained me: I was still very young, not more than twenty years old; and although I could navigate at one time, I had latterly paid no attention. I told Sanders this, and he replied,

Digitized by Google

that if I would take him as my first mate, that difficulty would be got over, as he could navigate well, and that I could learn to do so in the first voyage; so all was arranged.

Fortunately, I had not spent above one hundred pounds of the money—quite enough too in so short a time. I set off for Glasgow, in company with Sanders, and he busied himself very hard in looking about for a vessel that would suit. At last, he found that there was one ready for launching, which, in consequence of the failure of the house for which it was built, was to be sold. He made inquiries, and having found who was likely to purchase her—that it was a very safe and respectable firm—he made a proposal for me, that I should take one-fourth share of her, and command her. As Sanders was very respectable, and well known to be a steady man, his recommendation was attended to so far, that the parties wished to see and speak to me. They were satisfied with me, young as I was, and the bargain was made. I paid down my two thousand pounds for my share, and as soon as the vessel was launched, was very busy with Sanders, whom I had chosen as first mate, in fitting her out. The house which had purchased her with me was a West-India firm, and the ship was of course intended for the West-India trade. I had two or three hundred pounds left, after I had paid my share of the vessel, and this I employed in purchasing a venture on my own account, and providing nautical instruments, &c. I also fitted myself out. I dressed myself very smart—wore white shirts, and rings on my fingers: I even put on gloves, and tried to make my hands white. Indeed, as captain and part owner of a fine vessel, I was considered as somebody, and was often invited to the table of the other owners of the vessel. I was well off, for my pay was ten pounds a month, independent of what my own venture might produce, and my quarter-share of the profits of the vessel. This may be considered as the most prosperous portion of my life; and so, if you please, we will leave off here for to-night, for I may as well tell you at once that it did not last very long.'

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER XLI.

For several days after, they were employed in clearing away the stumps of the cocoa-nut trees in the winding path to the storehouse; and as soon as that work was finished Ready put up a lightning conductor at the side of the storehouse, like the one which he had put up near to the cottage. They had now got through all the work that they had arranged to do during the rainy season. The ewes had dropped their lambs; but both the sheep and the goats began to suffer for want of pasture. For a week they had no rain, and the sun burst out very powerfully; and Ready stated that it was his opinion that the rainy season was now over. William had become quite strong again, and he was very impatient that they should commence the survey of the island, and very anxious to be of the party. After a great deal of consultation, it was at last settled that Ready and William should make the first survey to the southward, and then return and report what they had discovered. This was decided upon on the Saturday evening, and on the Monday morning they were to start. The whole of Saturday was occupied in making their preparations. After supper, Ready said, 'Now, Master William, before we start on our travels, I think I may as well wind up my history. I haven't a great deal more to tell, as my good fortune did not last long; and, after my remaining so long in a French prison, my life was one continued chapter of from bad to worse. Our ship was soon ready, and we sailed with convoy for Barbadoes. Sanders proved a good navigator, and from him, before we arrived at Barbadoes, I gained all the knowledge which I required to enable me to command and navigate my vessel. Sanders attempted to renew our serious conversation, but my property had made me vain; and I not only kept him at a distance, but assumed the superior. This was a very ungrateful return for his kindness to me, Master William, but it is too often the case in this world. Sanders was very much annoyed, and on our arrival at Barbadoes, he told me that it was his intention to quit the vessel. I replied very haughtily, that he might do as he pleased; the fact is, I was anxious to get rid of him, merely

Digitized by Google

because I was under obligations to him: I tell this to my shame, Master William. My ship was soon with a full cargo of sugar on board of her, and we waited for convoy to England. When at Barbadoes, I had an opportunity to buy four brass guns, which I mounted on deck, and had a good supply of ammunition on board. I was very proud of my vessel, and now that I had guns on board I considered myself quite safe from any of the enemies' privateers. While we were waiting for convoy, which was not expected for a fortnight, it blew a very heavy gale, and my ship, as well as others, dragged their anchors, and were driven out of Carlisle Bay. We were obliged to make sail to beat into the bay again, it still blowing very fresh. What with being tired waiting so long for convoy, and the knowledge that arriving before the other West-Indiamen would be very advantageous, I made up my mind that, instead of beating up into the bay again, I would run for England without protection, trusting to the fast sailing of my vessel and the guns which I had on board. I forgot at the time that the insurance on the vessel was made in England as "sailing with convoy," and that my sailing without would render the insurance void, if any misfortune occurred. Well, sir, I made sail for England, and for three weeks everything went on well. We saw very few vessels, and those which did chase us could not come up with us; but as we were running with a fair wind up channel, and I had made sure of being in port before night, a French privateer hove in sight and gave chase. We were obliged to haul our wind, and it blowing very fast we carried away our maintop-mast. This accident was fatal; the privateer came alongside of us and laid us by the board, and that night I was in a French prison, and I may say a pauper; for the insurance of the vessel was void, from my having sailed without convoy. I remained a prisoner for nearly six years. I contrived to escape with three or four others; we suffered dreadfully, and at last arrived in England, in a Swedish vessel, without money or even clothes that would keep out the weather. Of course, I had nothing to do but to look out for a berth on board of a ship, and I tried for that of second mate, but without success; I was too ragged and looked too miserable; so I determined, as I was starving, to go before the mast. There was a fine vessel in the port; I went on board to offer myself;

Digitized by Google

the mate went down to the captain, who came on deck, and who should he be but Sanders! I hoped that he would not remember me, but he did immediately, and held out his hand. I never did feel so ashamed in my life as I did then. Sanders perceived it, and asked me down into the cabin. I then told him all that had happened, and he appeared to forget that I had behaved so ill to him; he offered me a berth on board, and money in advance to fit me out. But if *he* would not remember my conduct, I could not forget it, and I told him so, and begged his forgiveness. Well, sir, that good man, as long as he lived, was my friend. I became his second mate before he died, and we were again very intimate. When he died, I continued second mate for some time, and then was displaced. Since that I have always been as a common seaman on board of different vessels; but I have been well treated and respected, and I may add, I have not been unhappy, for I felt that property would have only led me into follies, and have made me forget that in this world we are to live so as to prepare ourselves for another. I am now an old man, and weaned from the things of this world; all I hope is to die in peace, and be useful until it pleases God to call me away.'

CHAPTER XLII.

THEY were all up early the next morning, and breakfasted at an early hour. The fried fish was excellent. The knapsacks and guns, and the other requisites for the journey, were all prepared. William and Ready rose from the table, and, taking an affectionate leave of Mr and Mrs Seagrave, they started on their journey. The sun was shining brilliantly, and the weather had become warm; the ocean in the distance gleamed brightly as its waters danced, and the cocoa-nut trees moved their branches gracefully to the breeze. They set off in high spirits, and having called the two shepherd-dogs, and driven back Vixen, they passed the store-house, and ascending the hill on the other side, they got their hatchets ready to blaze the trees; and Ready having set his course by his pocket compass, they were fairly on their way. For some time they continued to cut the bark of

Digitized by Google

the trees with their hatchets without speaking, and then Ready stopped again to look at his compass.

'I think the wood is thicker here than ever, Ready,' observed William.

'Yes, sir, it is; but I suspect we are now in the thickest part of it. We must keep a little more away to the southward. We had better get on as fast as we can. We shall have less work by and by, and then we can talk better.'

For half an hour they continued their way through the wood, and, as Ready had observed, the trees became more distant from each other; still, however, they could not see anything before them but the stems of the cocoa-nuts.

'I think we had better pull up for a few minutes, Master William; you will be tired; you are not so strong as you were before your fever.'

'I have not been so used to exercise, Ready, and therefore I feel it more,' replied William, wiping his face with his handkerchief, as he laid his gun against the trunk of a tree. 'I should like to stop a few minutes. How long do you think it will be before we are out of the wood?'

'Not half an hour more, sir, I should think; even before that, perhaps. I do not know how far the wood may extend this direction. I am just as glad as you are, for I'm tired of marking the trees; however, we must continue to mark, or we shall not find our way back.'

In ten minutes more they were clear of the cocoa-nut grove, and found themselves among brushwood higher than their heads; so that they could not see how far they were from the shore.

'I think that before we go on, Ready, we had better have our dinner; that will do us good.'

'Well, Master William, we will take an early dinner, and we shall get rid of one bottle of water, at all events; indeed, I think that, as we must go back by the same way we came, we may as well leave our knapsacks and everything but our guns under these trees; I dare say we shall sleep here too, for I told Mr Seagrave positively not to expect us back to-night. I did not like to say so before your mother, she is so anxious about you.' They opened their knapsacks, and made their meal, the two dogs coming in for their full share; after which they again started on

Digitized by Google

their discoveries. For about ten minutes they continued to force their way through the thick and high bushes, till at last they broke out clear of them, and then looked around them for a short time without speaking. The sea was about half a mile distant, and the intervening land was clear, with fresh blades of grass just bursting out of the earth, composing a fine piece of pasture of at least fifty acres, here and there broken with small patches of trees and brushwood; there was no sandy beach, but the rocks rose from the sea about twenty to thirty feet high, and were in one or two places covered with something which looked as white as snow.

'Well, Ready,' said William, 'there will be no want of pasture for our flock, even if it increases to ten times its number.'

'No, sir,' replied Ready, 'we have great reason to be thankful; and now let us go on a little, and examine these patches of wood, and see what they are. I see a bright green leaf out there, which, if my eyes do not fail me, I have seen many a time before.' When they arrived at the clump of trees which Ready had pointed out, he said, 'Yes, Master William, I was right. Look there, this is the banana; it is just bursting out now, and will soon be ten feet high, and bearing fruit which is excellent eating; besides which, the stem is capital fodder for the beasts.'

'Here is a plant I never saw before; this little one,' said William, pulling up a piece of it, and showing it to Ready.

'But I have, Master William. It is what they call the bird's-eye pepper; they make Cayenne pepper out of it. Look, the pods are just formed; it will be useful to us in cooking, as we have no pepper left. Juno will be quite pleased. What a quantity of bananas are springing up in this spot; there will be a little forest of them in a few weeks.'

'What is that rough-looking sort of shrub out there, Ready?

'I can't see so well as you, Master William, so let us walk up to it. Oh, I know it now; it is what they call the prickly pear in the West Indies. The use it will be to us is to hedge in our garden, and protect it from the animals; it makes a capital fence, and grows very fast, and without trouble.'

'What is this plant, Ready?'

'I don't know, Master William: I can't say that I ever saw it before.'

Digitized by Google

'Then I think I had better make a collection of all those you don't know, and take them back to my father, for he is a very good botanist, and I dare say will know them all.'

'We will do so, sir; it is a very good thought of yours.'

On their arrival at the next patch of trees, Ready looked at them steadfastly for some time.

'Let me see,' said he; 'I think I know that tree, I have often seen it in hot countries. Yes, I have it, Master William; it's the guava.'

'What! is it the fruit they make guava jelly of?' said William.

'Yes, Master William, the very same. Which way would you like to go?'

'Let us walk in the direction of those five or six trees, and from there down to the rocks; I want to find out how it is that they are so white.'

'Be it so, sir, if you wish,' replied Ready.

'Why, Ready, what noise is that? Hark! such a chattering, it must be monkeys.'

'No, sir, they are not monkeys; but I'll tell you what they are, although I cannot see them; they are parrots—I know their noise well. We'll have some capital pies out of them, Master William.'

'Pies! do they make good pies, Ready?'

'Yes, excellent; and very often have I had a good dinner from one in the West Indies and in South America. Stop, sir, let us come a little this way; I see a leaf which I should like to examine. Oh! I thought I was not wrong. Look, sir! this is the best thing I have found yet—we now need not care so much about potatoes.'

'Why, what are they, Ready?'

'Yams, sir; yams, which they use instead of potatoes in the West Indies. Indeed, potatoes do not remain potatoes long, when planted in the hot climates.'

'How do you mean, Ready?'

'They turn into what they call sweet potatoes, after one or two crops; yams are better things, in my opinion.

As they neared the rocks, which were bare for about fifty yards from the water's edge, Ready said, 'I can tell you now what those

Digitized by Google

white patches on the rocks are, Master William; they are the places where the sea-birds come to every year to make their nests and bring up their young. They always come to the same place every year, if they are not disturbed.' They soon arrived at the spot, and found it white with the feathers of birds, mixed up with dirt.

'I see no nests, Ready, nor the remains of any.'

'No, sir; they do not make any nests, further than scratching a round hole, about half an inch deep, in the soil, and there they lay their eggs, sitting quite close to one another; they will soon be here, and begin to lay, and then we will come and take the eggs, if we want any, for they are not bad eating.'

'Why, Ready, what a quantity of good things we have found out already. This has been a very fortunate expedition of ours.'

They then walked along the sea-side for about a quarter of a mile, until they came to where the rocks were not so high, and there they discovered a little basin, completely formed in the rocks, with a narrow entrance.

'See, Master William, what a nice little harbour for our boat; we may here load it with yams and take it round to the bay, provided we can find an entrance through the reefs on the southern side of it, which we have not looked for yet, because we have not required it.'

'What is that thing on the bottom, there, Ready?' said William, pointing in the direction.

'I see it, sir; that is a sea crawfish, quite as good eating as a lobster. I wonder if I could make a lobster-pot? we should catch plenty, and very good they are.'

'And what are those little rough things on the rocks?'

'They are a very nice little sort of oyster, sir, very sweet; not like those we have in England, but very much better indeed, they are so delicate.'

'Ready,' said William, 'we have good three hours' daylight; suppose we go back and tell what we have seen: my mother will be so glad to see us.'

'I agree with you, Master William. We have done well for one day; and may safely go back again, and remain for another week, if that is all; that is, if we are wanted. There are no

Digitized by Google

fruits at present, and all I care about are the yams; I should like to protect them from the pigs.'

William, as he walked away from the beach towards the cocoa-nut grove, picked a sprig of every plant he fell in with, to take back to his father. They found out the spot where they had left their knapsacks and hatchets, and again took their path through the cocoa-nut trees. One hour before sunset they arrived at the house, where they found Mr and Mrs Seagrave sitting outside, and Juno standing on the beach with the two children, who were amusing themselves with picking up the shells which were strewed about. William showed his father the specimens of the plants which he had collected.

'This,' said Mr Seagrave, 'is a well-known plant; and I wonder Ready did not recognize it; it is hemp.'

'I never saw it except in the shape of rope,' replied Ready. 'I know the seed well enough.'

'Well, if we require it, I can tell you how to dress it,' replied Mr Seagrave. 'Now, William, what is the next?'

'This odd-looking rough thing.'

'That's the egg-plant: it bears a fruit of a blue colour. I am told they eat it in the hot countries.'

'Yes, sir, they do; they fry it with pepper and salt; they call it bringal. I think it must be that.'

'I do not doubt but you are right,' replied Mr Seagrave.

'I have only one more, papa; what is this?'

'You don't know it, because it has sprung up so high, William; but it is the common mustard plant,—what we use in England, and sold as mustard and cress. Well, I think you have now made a famous day's work of it; and we have much to thank God for. Here comes Juno to get supper on the table; so we will go: the sun is just disappearing, and it will be dark in a few minutes.'

CHAPTER XLIII.

As usual, Ready was the first up on the following morning, and having greeted Juno, who followed him out of the house, he

Digitized by Google

set off on his accustomed rounds, to examine into the stock and their other possessions. He was standing in the garden at the point. First he thought that it would be necessary to get ready some sticks for the peas, which were now seven or eight inches out of the ground. He had gone on to ascertain if the cucumber seeds had shown themselves above the ground, and was pleased to find that they were doing well. He said to himself, 'We have no vinegar, that I know of, but we can preserve them in salt water, as they do in Russia; it will be a change, at all events;' and then he raised his eyes and looked out to the offing, and, as usual, scanned the horizon. He thought he saw a ship to the north-east, and he applied his telescope to his eye. He was not mistaken—it was a vessel.

The old man's heart beat quick; he dropped his telescope on his arm, and fetched some heavy breaths. After a minute, he again put his telescope to his eye, and then made her out to be a brig under top-sails and top-gallant sails, steering directly for the island.

Ready walked to the rocky point, from which they fished, and sat down to reflect. Could it be that the vessel had been sent after them, or that she had by mere chance come among the islands? He decided, after a short time, that it must be chance, for none could know that they were saved, much less that they were on the island. Her steering toward the island must then be either that she required water or something else; perhaps she would alter her course and pass by them.

Ready rose up again, examined the vessel with his telescope, and then walked towards the house. William was up, and the remainder of the family were stirring.

'William,' said Ready to him, as they walked away from the house, 'I have a secret to tell you, which you will at once see the necessity of not telling to any one at present. There is a vessel off the island; she may be the means of rescuing us, or she may pass without seeing us. It would be too cruel a disappointment to your father and mother, if the latter were the case.'

Ready caught the vessel in the field of the telescope, which he leant against the trunk of a cocoa-nut, and William put his eye to the glass.

Digitized by Google

'Do you see her, sir?'

'O yes, Ready, and she is coming this way.'

'Yes, sir, she is steering right for the island; but do not talk so loud; I will put the telescope down here, and we will go about our work; there is an axe at the storehouse.'

William and Ready went to the storehouse for the axe. Ready selected a very slight cocoa-nut tree nearest to the beach, which he cut down, and as soon as the top was taken off, with the assistance of William, he carried it down to the point.

'Now, Master William, go for a shovel and dig a hole here, that we may fix it up as a flag-staff. When all is ready, I will go for a small block and some rope for halyards to hoist up the flags as soon as the vessel is likely to see them. At breakfast-time, I shall propose that you and I get the boat out of the sand and examine her, and give Mr Seagrave some work in-doors.'

During breakfast-time, Ready observed that he intended to get the boat out of the sand, and that William should assist him.

'And what am I to do, Ready?' said Mr Seagrave.

'Why, sir, I think, now that the rains are over, it would not be a bad thing if we were to air bedding, as they say at sea.'

'Had we not better have the canvas screens down and air them too?' said William.

'Yes, sir,' replied Ready, 'we had better air everything. We will assist in taking down the screens and flags, and spread them out to air, and then, if Mr Seagrave has no objection, we will leave him to superintend and assist Madam Seagrave and Juno.'

Ready and William took down the canvas screens and flags, and went out of the cottage with them; they spread out the canvas at some distance from the house, and then William went down to the beach with the flags, while Ready procured the block and small rope to hoist them up with.

Ready's stratagem answered well. Without being perceived by those in the cottage, the flagstaff was raised, and fixed in the ground, and the flags all ready for hoisting; then Ready and William returned to the fuel-stack, and each carried down as much stuff as they could hold, that they might make a smoke to attract the notice of those on board the vessel. All this did not occupy much more than an hour, during which the brig continued her course steadily towards the island. When Ready

Digitized by Google

first saw her, the wind was light, but latterly the breeze had increased very much, and at last the brig took in her top-gallant sails. The horizon behind the vessel, which had been quite clear, was now banked up with clouds, and the waves curled in white foam over the reefs of rocks extending from the island.

'The breeze is getting up strong, Master William,' said Ready, 'and she will soon be down, if she is not frightened at the reefs, which she can see plainer, now the water is rough, than she could before.'

'How far do you think she is off now?'

'About five miles, Master William; not more. The wind has hauled round more to the southward, and it is banking up fast, I see. Come, Master William, let us hoist the flags; we must not lose a chance; the flags will blow nice and clear for them to see them.'

William and Ready hoisted up the ensign first, and below it the flag with the ship's name, '*Pacific*,' in large letters upon it. 'Now then,' said Ready, as he made fast the halyards, 'let us strike a light and make a smoke; that will attract their notice.'

As soon as the cocoa-nut leaves were lighted, Ready and William threw water upon them, so as to damp them and procure a heavy column of smoke. The vessel approached rapidly, and they were watching her in silent suspense, when they perceived Mr and Mrs Seagrave, Juno carrying Albert, with Tommy and Caroline, running down as fast as they could to the beach.

'Oh! Ready, why did you not tell us this before?' exclaimed Mr Seagrave, out of breath.

'I wish you had not known it now, sir,' replied Ready; 'but, however, it can't be helped; it was done out of kindness, Mr Seagrave.'

'Yes, indeed it was, papa.'

Mrs Seagrave dropped down on the rock, and burst into tears. Mr Seagrave was equally excited.

'Does she see us, Ready?' exclaimed he at last.

'She does! she does!' cried William, throwing up his hat; 'see, she hoists her ensign.'

'Very true, sir; she does see us. Thanks be to God.'

Mr Seagrave embraced his wife, who threw herself sobbing into his arms, kissed his children with rapture, and wrung old

Digitized by Google

Ready's hand. He was almost frantic with joy. William was equally delighted. Juno grinned and laughed, while the tears ran down her cheeks, and Tommy took little Caroline by her two hands, and they danced round and round together.

As soon as they were a little more composed, Ready observed: 'Mr Seagrave, that they have seen us is certain, and what we must now do is to get our own boat out of the sand. We know the passage through the reefs, and they do not. I doubt if they will, however, venture to send a boat on shore until the wind moderates a little. You see, sir, it is blowing up very strong just now.'

'But you don't think it will blow harder, Ready?'

'I am sorry to say, sir, that I do. It looks very threatening to the southward, and until the gale is over they will not venture near an island so surrounded with rocks. It would be very imprudent if they did. However, sir, a few hours will decide.'

'She is leaving us,' exclaimed William, mournfully.

'Hard-hearted wretches!' said Mr Seagrave, with indignation.

'You are wrong to say that, sir,' replied Ready: 'excuse me, Mr Seagrave, for being so bold; but the fact is, that if I was in command of that vessel, I should do just as they have done. The gale rises fast, and it would be very dangerous for them to remain where they now are. It does not at all prove that they intend to leave us; they but consult their own safety, and, when the gale is over, we shall, I trust, see them again.'

No reply was made to Ready's judicious remarks. The Seagraves only saw that the vessel was leaving them, and their hearts sank. They watched her in silence, and as she gradually diminished to the view, so did their hopes depart from them. They walked away from the beach without speaking: the remainder of the party, with the exception of old Ready, followed them, who remained some time with his eyes in the direction where the vessel was last seen. At last he hauled down the ensign and flag, and throwing them over his shoulder, followed the disconsolate party to the house.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER XLIV.

WHEN Ready arrived, he found them all plunged in such deep distress, that he did not consider it advisable to say anything. The evening closed in; it was time to retire. The children had already been put to bed; but Mr Seagrave remained without speaking, holding his wife by her hand. Mrs Seagrave's head was rested upon her husband's shoulder, and an occasional low sob was to be heard. The hour for retiring to rest had long passed, when Ready broke the silence by saying, 'Surely you do not intend to sit up all night, Mr Seagrave?'

'Oh! no; there's no use sitting up now,' replied Mr Seagrave, rising up impatiently. 'Come, my dear, let us go to bed.'

Mrs Seagrave rose, and retired behind the canvas screen. Her husband seemed as if he was about to follow her, when Ready, without speaking, laid the Bible on the table before him. Mr Seagrave did not appear to notice it; but William touched his father's arm, pointed to the book, and then went inside of the screen, and led out his mother.

'God forgive me!' exclaimed Mr Seagrave; 'in my selfishness and discontent I had forgotten——'

Ready was dressed before daylight, and out on the beach before the sun had risen. The gale was at its height; and, after a careful survey with his telescope, he could see nothing of the vessel. He remained on the beach till breakfast-time, when he was summoned by William, and returned to the house. He found Mr and Mrs Seagrave up, and more composed than they were the evening before; and they welcomed him warmly.

'I fear, Ready,' said Mr Seagrave, 'that you have no good news for us.'

'No, sir, nor can you expect any good news until after the gale is over.'

'There is but poor comfort in all that, Ready,' replied Mr Seagrave.

'It is useless holding out false hopes, sir,' replied Ready; 'but even if the vessel continues her voyage, I consider we have much to be thankful for.'

'In what, Ready?'

Digitized by Google

'Why, sir, no one knew whether we were in existence or not; but now we have made it known, and by the ship's name on the flag they know who we are, and, if they arrive safe in port, will not fail to communicate the intelligence to your friends. We may not be taken off by this vessel, but we have every hope that another will be sent out to us.'

The following day Ready was up early, as usual, and William accompanied him to the beach.

'I don't think that it blows so hard as it did, Ready.'

'No, Master William, it does not; the gale is breaking, and by night, I have no doubt, will be over. It is, however, useless looking for the vessel, as she must be a long way from this. It would take her a week, perhaps, to come back to us, if she was to try to do so, unless the wind should change to the northward or westward.'

'Ready! Ready!' exclaimed William, pointing to the south-east part of the reef; 'what is that? Look! it's a boat.'

Ready put his telescope to his eye. 'It's a canoe, Master William, and there are people in it.'

'Why, where can they have come from, Ready? See! they are among the breakers; they will be lost.'

They hastened along the beach to the spot nearest to where the canoe was tossing on the surf, and watched it as it approached the shore.

'Master William, this canoe must have been blown off from the large island, which lies out there;' and Ready again looked through his telescope: 'there are two people in it, and they are islanders. They have passed through the most dangerous part of the reef.'

'Yes, they will soon be in smoother water; but the surf on the beach is very heavy.'

'They won't mind that, if their strength don't fail them—they manage the canoe beautifully.'

During this conversation the canoe had rapidly come towards the land. In a moment or two afterwards it passed through the surf and grounded on the beach. The two people in it had just strength enough left to paddle through the surf, and then they dropped down in the bottom of the canoe, quite exhausted.

Digitized by Google

'Let's drag the canoe higher up, Master William. Poor creatures! they are nearly dead.'

While dragging it up, Ready observed that the occupants were both women: their faces were tattooed all over, which disfigured them very much; otherwise they were young, and might have been good-looking.

'Shall I run up and get something for them, Ready?'

Do, Master William; ask Juno to give you some of whatever there is for breakfast; anything warm.'

William soon returned with some thin oatmeal porridge, which Juno had been preparing for breakfast; and a few spoonfuls being forced down the throats of the two natives, they gradually revived. William then left Ready, and went up to acquaint his father and mother with this unexpected event.

William soon returned with Mr Seagrave, and as the women were now able to sit up, they hauled up the canoe as far as they could, to prevent her being beat to pieces. They found nothing in the canoe, except a piece of matting and the two paddles which had been used by the natives.

'You see, sir,' said Ready, 'it is very clear that these two poor women, having been left in charge of the canoe, have been blown off from the shore of one of the islands to the south-east; they must have been contending with the gale ever since the day before yesterday, and, as it appears, without food or water. It's a mercy that they gained this island.'

'It is so,' replied Mr Seagrave; 'but to tell the truth, I am not over pleased at their arrival. It proves what we were not sure of before, that we have very near neighbours, who may probably pay us a very unwelcome visit. I presume they will understand signs.'

Ready then beckoned to them to get on their feet, which they both did, although with some difficulty. He then went in advance, making a sign for them to follow; they understood him, and made the attempt, but were so weak, that they would have fallen if they had not been supported by Mr Seagrave and William.

It required a long time for them to arrive at the house. Mrs Seagrave, who knew what had happened, received them very kindly, and Juno had a mess ready, which she put before them.

Digitized by Google

They ate a little, and then lay down, and were soon sound asleep.

'It is fortunate for us that they are women,' observed Mr Seagrave: 'we should have had great difficulty had they been men.'

'Yes, sir,' replied Ready; 'but still we must not trust women too much at first, for they are savages.'

'Where shall we put them to-night, Ready?'

'Why, sir, I have been thinking about that. I wish we had a shed close to us: but as we have not, we must let them sleep in the storehouse.'

'Yes, that will do very well.'

We must now pass over a space of fifteen days, in which there was nothing done. The expectation of the vessel returning was still alive, although each day decreased these hopes. Every morning Ready and William were at the beach with the telescope, and the whole of the day was passed in surmises, hopes, and fears. No other subject was broached—not any of the work proposed was begun, as it was useless to do anything if they were to leave the island. After the first week had passed, they felt that every day their chances were more adverse, and at the end of the fortnight all hopes were very unwillingly abandoned.

The Indian women had, in the mean time, recovered their fatigues, and appeared to be very mild and tractable. Whatever they were able to do, they did cheerfully, and had already gained a few words of English. The party to explore was again talked over, and arranged for the following Monday, when a new misfortune fell on them, which disconcerted all their arrangements.

On the Saturday morning, when Ready, as usual, went his rounds, as he walked along the beach, he perceived that the Indian canoe was missing. It had been hauled up clear of the water, so that it could not have floated away. Ready's heart misgave him; he looked through his telescope in the direction of the large island, and thought he could distinguish a speck on the water at a great distance. As he was thus occupied, William came down to him.

'Master William,' said Ready, 'I fear those island women have escaped in their canoe. Run up and see if they are in the outhouse, or anywhere else, and let me know as soon as you can.'

William in a few minutes returned, breathless, stating that the

Digitized by Google

women were not to be found, and that they had evidently carried away with them a quantity of the large nails and other pieces of iron which were in the small kegs in the storehouse.

'This is bad, Master William—very bad indeed. When they get back to their own people, and show them the iron they have brought with them, and describe how much more there is to be had, depend upon it, we shall have a visit from them in numbers, that they may obtain more. I ought to have known better than to have left the canoe here; it should have been burnt. We must go and consult with Mr Seagrave, for the sooner we begin to work now, the better.'

They communicated the intelligence to Mr Seagrave when they were outside. He at once perceived their danger; but considered it better to acquaint Mrs Seagrave with it, and to conceal nothing.

This was done accordingly, and then they held a council, and came to the following resolutions:—

That it would be necessary that they should immediately stockade the storehouse, so as to render it impossible for any one to get in; and that, as soon as the fortification was complete, the storehouse should be turned into their dwelling-house; and such stores as could not be put within the stockade should be removed to their present house, or concealed in the cocoa-nut grove.

CHAPTER XLV.

When we closed our last chapter, the family on the island were in a very uncomfortable state of mind; they had suffered much by disappointment, from the vessel having been driven off the island by the gale of wind, at a time when they felt certain that they would be taken on board; and, moreover, the escape of the two native women in the canoe, with the iron nails, and other articles, so coveted by savages, had filled them with apprehensions lest the savages should visit the island in great numbers with the hope of obtaining more. They were consequently in so sad a state of suspense, that for three weeks after the vessel had been driven away, notwithstanding their consultations and resolutions,

Digitized by Google

they still remained quite inactive: at times, indulging the hope that the vessel might return; at others, looking anxiously in the direction of the larger island, to ascertain if there was not a fleet of canoes coming down for their destruction.

One morning, at sunrise, as they were looking round with the telescope, close to the turtle-pond, Masterman Ready said to Mr Seagrave, 'Indeed, sir, we must no longer remain in this state of idleness. It appears to me that it will not do to keep in the house, for we may, as I have said, be surprised by the savages at any hour in the night, and we have no means of defence against numbers.'

'I feel that, and have felt it for some time,' replied Mr Seagrave. 'What shall we do, then; shall we return to the cove?'

'I should think not, sir,' said Ready; 'what I propose is this: we have made a discovery on the south of the island, which is of great importance to us; not that I consider the fruit and other plants of any great value, as they will only serve to increase our luxuries, if I may so call them, during the summer season. One great advantage to us is the feed which we have found for our live stock, and the fodder for them during the rainy season; but principally, the patch of yams, which will afford us food during the winter. They are of great importance to us, and we cannot too soon protect them from the pigs, which will certainly root them all up, if we do not prevent them. Now, sir, you know what we had arranged to do, but which we have not done; I think the cocoa-nut rails will take too much time, and it will be sufficient to make a ditch and hedge round the yams, sir; but it will be very tedious if we are to go backwards and forwards to do the work, and Mrs Seagrave and the children will be left alone. I therefore propose, as the weather is now set in fair, and will remain so for months, that we pitch our tents on that part of the island, and remove the whole family there; we shall soon be very comfortable, and at all events much safer there than if we remain here without any defence. Now I come to the second part of my proposition. As soon as we done our work at the yam-plantation, and made everything as comfortable there as we can, I think we may then leave Mrs Seagrave and the children in the tents, and work here. As we before agreed, let us abandon the house, in which we live at present, and fit out the out-

Digitized by Google

house, which is concealed in the cocoa-nut grove, as a dwelling-house, and fortify it so as to be secure against any sudden attack of the savages; for return here we must, to live, as we cannot remain in the tents after the rainy season sets in.'

'How do you propose to fortify it, Ready?' said Mr Seagrave; 'I hardly know. What is a stockade?'

'That I will explain to you by and by, sir. Then, if the savages come here, at all events we should be able to defend ourselves with fire-arms; one man behind a stockade is better than twenty who have no other arms but spears and clubs; and we may, with the help of God, beat them off.'

'I think your plan is excellent, Ready,' said Mr Seagrave, 'and that the sooner we begin the better.'

'That there is no doubt of, sir. Now, the first job is for William and me to try for the passage through this side of the reef with the boat, and then we will look for the little harbour which we discovered; as soon as that is done, we will return, and take the tents and all we require round in the boat, and when we have pitched the tents, and all is arranged, Mrs Seagrave and the children can walk through the wood with us and take possession. Now, Mr Seagrave, if we are all agreed, the sooner we begin the better, for we have plenty to do, and we must recollect that we shall have to go up to the cove before we can commence the stockade, to procure nails, and many other things; indeed, we may as well have a regular survey of our stores there when we are about it. At breakfast, sir, we will communicate our intentions to Mrs Seagrave; after breakfast, William and I will take the boat and try for the passage. You can remain here, packing up the tents, and such articles as must first be carried round. We shall be back, I hope, by dinner-time.'

CHAPTER XLVI.

THE subject was introduced to Mrs Seagrave while they were at breakfast, and as she perceived how much more secure they would be, she cheerfully consented. In less than an hour afterwards, William and Ready had prepared the boat, and were

Digitized by Google

pulling out among the rocks of the reef to find a passage, which, after a short time, and by keeping two or three cables from the point, they succeeded in doing.

'This is very fortunate, Master William,' observed Ready; 'but we must now take some marks to find our way in again. See, sir, the large black rock is on a line with the garden point: so, if we keep them in one, we shall know that we are in the proper channel; and now for a mark abreast of us, to find out when we enter it.'

'Why, Ready, the corner of the turtle-pond just touches the right wall of the house,' replied William.

'So it does, sir; that will do, and now let us pull away as hard as we can, so as to be back in good time.'

They soon were on the south side of the island, and pulling up along the shore.

'How far do you think that it is by water, Ready?'

'I hardly know, Master William; but at least four or five miles, so we must make up our minds to a good hour's pull. At all events, we shall sail back again with this wind, although there is but little of it.'

'We are in very deep water, now,' observed William, after a long silence.

'Yes, sir; on this side of the island we must expect it; the coral grows to leeward only. I think that we cannot be very far from the little harbour we discovered. You see, sir, we have opened upon the meadow land and the clumps of trees. Suppose we leave off rowing for a minute, and look about us.'

'There are two rocks close to the shore, Ready,' said William, pointing, 'and you recollect there were two or three rocks outside of the harbour.'

'Very true, Master William; and I should not wonder if you have hit upon the very spot. Let us pull in.'

They did so; and, to their satisfaction, found that they were in the harbour, where the water was as smooth as a pond.

'Now, then, Master William, we will step the mast, and sail back at our leisure.'

'Stop one moment, Ready; give me the boat-hook. I see something between the clefts of the rocks.'

Ready handed the boat-hook to William, who, lowering it

Digitized by Google

down into the water, drove the spike of iron at the end of it into a large crayfish, which he hauled up into the boat.

'That will be an addition to our dinner, Master William,' said Ready; 'we do not go back empty-handed, and, therefore, as the saying is, we shall be more welcome; now, then, let us start, for we must pull here again this afternoon, and with a full cargo on board.'

They stepped the mast, and as soon as they had pulled the boat clear of the harbour, they set the sail, and in less than an hour had rejoined the party at the house.

CHAPTER XLVII.

As soon as dinner was over, Mr Seagrave and Juno assisted them in carrying down the canvas and poles for the tent, with shovels to clear away, and the pegs to fix the tents up properly. Before they started, William observed, 'I think it would be a good thing if Ready and I were to take our bedding with us, and then we could fix up one tent this evening, and sleep there; to-morrow morning we might set up the other, and get a good deal of work over before we came back.'

As Mr Seagrave was of the same opinion, Juno packed up a piece of salt pork and some flour cakes, which with three or four bottles of water, they took down to the boat; the axes, saw, and mallet were also put in. Ready having thrown in a piece of rope to moor the boat with, they shoved off, and were soon through the reef, and after a smart pull they arrived again at the small harbour.

As soon as they had landed all the things, they made the boat fast by the rope, and then carried a portion of the canvas and tent-poles up to the first copse of trees, which were the guavas; they then returned for the remainder, and after three trips everything was up.

'Now, Master William, we must see where we must pitch the tent; we must not be too near the cocoa-nut grove, or we shall have too far to go for water.'

'Don't you think that the best place will be close to the

Digitized by Google

bananas? the ground is higher there, and the water is, you know, between the bananas and the yams.'

They walked to where the bananas were now throwing out their beautiful large green leaves, and decided that they would fix the tents upon the north side of them; first, because the trees would prevent the tents from being seen from the seaward, and secondly, because the clumps would shade them from the sun during the hottest portion of the day.

'So here let it be, Master William,' said Ready; 'it is a nice dry spot, and I think will do capitally.'

They were soon hard at work, and long before sunset one tent was ready, and they had put their bedding in it.

Then they walked to where the ground between the bananas and yam-patch was wet and swampy, and dug two large holes about a yard deep and square; the water trickled in very fast, and they were up to their ankles before they had finished.

They returned to the tent, and made their supper off the salt pork and flour cakes, and then lay down on the mattresses. They were soon fast asleep, for they were well tired out with the hard work which they had gone through.

The next morning, at sunrise, they were up again; the first thing they did was to go and examine the holes they had dug for water: they found them full and running over, and the water had settled quite clear; they tasted it, and pronounced it very good.

As soon as they had washed themselves, they went back and made their breakfast, and then set to work to get up the other tent, which, being for Mrs Seagrave and the children, was more carefully put up. They then cleared all the ground near the tents of brushwood and high grass, and levelled it nicely with their shovels inside.

'Now, Master William, we have another job, which is to prepare a fire-place for Juno: we must go down to the beach for stones. Let us take this large bit of canvas, and then between us we may carry up as many as we require.'

In another hour the fire-place was completed, and Ready and William looked at their work.

'Well, I call this a very comfortable lodging-house,' said Ready.

They went down to the boat, and sailed back as before; by

Digitized by Google

ten o'clock in the morning they had regained the house, and then they made the arrangements for their work during the remainder of the day. It was agreed that the provisions necessary for a day or two, the table and chairs, the cooking utensils, and a portion of their clothes, should be taken round that afternoon, that Ready and William should come back early the next morning, and then they should all set off together through the wood to the new location.

CHAPTER XLVIII.

THE boat was well loaded that afternoon, and they had a heavy pull round, and hard work afterwards, to carry all the articles up. William and Ready were, therefore, not sorry when their work was done, and they went to bed as soon as they had taken their supper.

At sunrise, they went back to the bay in the boat, which they hauled up, and then proceeded to the house, where they found that every one was ready to start. Mr Seagrave had collected all the animals, and they set off; the marks on the trees were very plain, and they had no difficulty in finding their way; but they had a good deal of trouble with the goats and sheep, and did not get on very fast. It was three hours before they got clear of the cocoa-nut grove, and Mrs Seagrave was quite tired out. At last they arrived, and Mr and Mrs Seagrave could not help exclaiming, 'How beautiful!'

When they came to where the tents were pitched by the side of the bananas, they were equally pleased: it was quite a fairy spot. Mrs Seagrave went into her tent to repose after her fatigue; the goats and sheep were allowed to stray away as they pleased, and were feeding with avidity upon the fresh herbage; the dogs lay down, panting with their long journey; Juno put little Albert on the bed, while she went with William to collect fuel to cook the dinner; Ready went to the pits to get some water, while Mr Seagrave walked about, examining the different clumps of trees with which the meadow was studded; Caroline was in the tent with her mother, and Tommy sat on the ground and stared about him.

Digitized by Google

It was late before the dinner was ready, and they were all very glad to go early to bed.

At day-dawn, William and Ready had again started, and walked through the cocoa-nut grove back to the house, to bring round in the boat the articles of furniture and the clothes which had been left. Having collected everything in the house, and procured some more pork and flour from the storehouse, they completed the load by spearing one of the turtles which remained, and putting it into the bottom of the boat; they then set off again for their new residence, and arrived in time for breakfast. After the meal was over, they were assisted by Juno and Mr Seagrave in bringing the contents of the boat up to the tents.

'What a delightful spot this is,' said Mrs Seagrave. 'I assure you, Ready, that I like the change, and shall be sorry when we have to go back again.'

'I saw such pretty parrots this morning,' said little Caroline; 'I wish I had one for my very own.'

'I'll try, Miss, to find you a young one by and by; but it is too soon yet,' replied Ready. 'Now I must go and help Juno to cut up the turtle. We must make our larder among the banana-trees.'

'But what are we all to do, Ready?' said Mr Seagrave; 'we must not be idle.'

'No, sir; but I think we must give up this day to putting everything to rights, and making everything comfortable inside the tents; we must be at Mrs Seagrave's orders to-day, and to-morrow we will commence the ditch and hedge round the yam plantation.'

CHAPTER XLIX.

THE next morning they went with their shovels to the yam plantation, and commenced their work. As the ground was soft and swampy, the labour was very easy. The ditch was dug nearly a yard wide, and the earth thrown up on a bank inside. They then went to where the large patch of prickly pears grew,

Digitized by Google

and cut a quantity, which they planted on the top of the bank. Before night, they had finished about nine or ten yards of the hedge and ditch.

Before Mr Seagrave and Ready started on the following morning the latter gave William directions as to the boat. The provisions and the knapsack having been already prepared, they took leave of Mrs Seagrave, and set off, each armed with a musket, and Ready with his axe slung over his shoulder. They had a long walk before them, as they had first to find their way back to the house, and from thence had to walk through the wood to the cove, so that it was a long round to take, but that could not be helped, as they were obliged to follow the blazing or marks which they had made in the trees.

As soon as they arrived at the house, they stopped there an hour to rest, and then went down to the garden at the point; the potatoes and peas in the garden were looking very well, and the onion seed had not failed. Ready carefully examined and repaired the fence, because, as he observed, now that the wild pigs were driven away from the yams, they would, in all probability, come there in search of food.

'How solitary and deserted the place looks now, Ready, that there is nothing living to be seen,' observed Mr Seagrave. 'Let us go on.'

They recommenced their journey, and in two hours more reached the cove, where they had first landed. The rocks near to it were strewed with timber and planks, which lay bleaching in the sun, or half buried in the sand at the little cove.

They walked round, but, with the exception of spars and a barrel or two of tar, they could find nothing of value. There was no want of staves and iron hoops of broken casks, and these, Ready observed, would make excellent palings for the garden when they had time to bring them round; and he said, that he thought there were so many, that they might pale off a piece of land to sow their wheat and barley in by and by, and in the mean time it would enable them to make hay for the winter provisions of the stock, which, however, was not of such consequence, now that they had such a quantity of banana stems to feed the animals with during the rainy season.

After they had returned, they sat down to rest themselves,

Digitized by Google

and then they went to the tents in the cocoa-nut grove, in which they had collected the articles thrown up when the ship went to pieces.

'Why! the pigs have been at work here,' said Ready; 'they have contrived to open one cask of flour somehow or another; look, sir,—I suppose it must have been shaky, or they could not have routed into it; the canvas is not good for much, I fear; fortunately, we have several bolts of new, which I brought on shore. Now, sir, we will see what condition the stores are in. All these are casks of flour, and we run no risk in opening them, and seeing if they are in good order.'

The first cask which was opened had a cake round it as hard as a board; but when it was cut through with the axe, the inside was found in a good state.

'That's all right, sir; and I presume the others will be the same; the salt water has got in so far and made a crust, which has preserved the rest. But now let us go to dinner, and to work afterwards. We have some nice cold fried turtle steaks, which Juno has packed up for us.'

CHAPTER L.

After dinner they resumed their labour. 'I wonder what's in this case?' said Mr Seagrave, pointing to the first at hand. Ready set to work with his axe, and broke off the lid, and found a number of pasteboard boxes full of tapes, narrow ribbons, staylaces, whalebones, and cottons on reels.

The next was a box with a lock; the lid was forced up, and they found a dozen half-gallon square bottles of gin stored in divisions.

'That's Hollands, sir, I know,' said Ready; 'what shall we do with it?'

'We will not destroy it, Ready, but at the same time we will not use it but as a medicine,' replied Mr Seagrave.

'I trust we shall never want to drink a drop of it, sir, either as a medicine or otherwise. Now, for this cask with wooden hoops.'

Digitized by Google

The head was soon out, and discovered a dinner set of painted china with gold edges, which was very beautiful.

'Here's a box with your name on it, sir,' said Ready; 'do you know what is in it?'

'I have no idea, Ready; but your axe will decide the point.'

When the box was opened, everything appeared in a sad mouldy state, from the salt water which had penetrated; but on removing the brown paper and pasteboard, it was found to contain stationery of all sorts, and, except on the outside, it was very little injured.

'This is indeed a treasure, Ready. Now for that cask.'

'I can tell what that is by the outside; it is oil, and very acceptable, for our candles are nearly out. But there are two or three cases more of candles which we saved. Now we come to the most valuable of all our property.'

'What is that, Ready?'

'All the articles which I brought on shore in the different trips I took in the boat before the ship went to pieces. I have a famous lot of nails. Here are three kegs of small nails, besides two bags of large, and there are several axes, hammers, and other tools, besides all these hanks of twine, sailing needles, and bees'-wax, and here's a few bolts of fine canvas, and all in good order. Here's some more of my plunder, as the Americans say. All these are wash-deck buckets, this is a small harness-cask for salting meat, and here's the cook's wooden trough for making bread, which will please Miss Juno; and in it, you see, I have put all the galley-hooks, ladles, and spoons, and the iron trivets (they will be very useful), and here's two lamps. Here's the two casks, one of cartridges made up, and the other of gunpowder: and here's the half-cask of cartridges, all in good order, and the other six muskets, which, by the by, will want a little cleaning.

'These are really treasures, Ready, and yet how well we have done without them.'

'Let us go on with our search, sir. Here are the ship's compasses, and deep sea line and reel, also the land lead. The stuff will be very useful for our little boat.'

'And I am very glad of the compasses, Ready; for with them I shall be able to make a sort of survey of the island, when I

Digitized by Google

have a little time. That case contains books; but what portion of my library I do not know.'

'But you soon will, sir,' replied Ready, wrenching it open with his axe. 'They are a little stained on the outside, but they are jammed so tight, that they do not appear to have suffered much. Here are one or two, sir.'

'Plutarch's Lives. I am glad I have them: they are excellent reading for young or old; there is no occasion to open any more, Ready.'

CHAPTER LI.

Mr Seagrave and Ready then set to work, and made a rough sort of bed of cocoa-nut branches, and went to sleep. The next morning they resumed their labour, and opened every other case and package that had been saved from the wreck; they found more books, four boxes of candles, three casks of rice (good and damaged), and several other useful articles, besides many others which were of no value to them.

A chest of tea and two bags of coffee, which Ready had brought on shore, were, much to their delight, found in good order; but there was no sugar, the little which they had saved having been melted away.

'That's unfortunate, sir. Master Tommy won't like to go without sugar.'

'Master Tommy must learn privation, Ready. Now let us go to where we covered up the other articles with sand.'

The sand was shovelled up, and the barrels of beef and pork and the deal boards found in good order, but many other things were quite spoiled. About noon they had finished, and as they had plenty of time, Mr Seagrave took the bearings of the different points of land with the compasses. They then shouldered their muskets and, Ready taking a few pounds of damaged rice for the fowls, set off on their return.

They gained the house in the bay, and having rested a little while at the storehouse, they proceeded on their way to the tents in the meadow. They had about half a mile to go, when Ready

Digitized by Google

heard a noise, and made a sign to Mr Seagrave to stop. Ready, whispering to Mr Seagrave that the pigs were all close to them, loaded his musket; Mr Seagrave did the same, and they walked very softly to where they now heard their grunting; they did not see them till they were within twenty yards, and then they came upon the whole herd: the pigs raised their heads; the old ones gave a loud grunt, and then, just as Ready fired his musket, they all set off at full speed. Mr Seagrave had no opportunity of firing, but Ready had shot one, which lay kicking and struggling under a cocoa-nut tree.

'A piece of fresh pork will be quite a treat, Mr Seagrave,' said Ready, as they walked up to where the animal was lying.

'It will, indeed, Ready,' replied Mr Seagrave; 'we must contrive to carry the beast home between us.'

'We will sling it on the musket, sir, and it will not be very heavy. It is one of those born on the island, and a very fine fellow for his age.'

The pig was soon slung, and they carried it between them. As they cleared the wood, they perceived Mrs Seagrave and William, who had heard the report of the musket, and had come out to meet them. Mrs Seagrave was a little agitated; but as soon as she saw the pig, she knew why the musket had been fired.

William took the load from his father, who walked on with Mrs Seagrave.

'Well, Master William, what news have you?' said Ready.

'Why, very good, Ready. Yesterday evening, when I was tired of work, I thought I would take the boat, and try if there was any fish to be caught on this side of the island, in the deep water, and I caught three large ones, quite different from those we took among the reefs. We had one for breakfast and dinner to-day, and it was excellent.'

'Did you go out in the boat by yourself?'

'No; I took Juno with me. Mamma said that she could spare her for an hour or so. She pulls very well, Ready.'

'She is a handy girl, Master William. Well, we have had our survey, and there will be plenty of work for you and me, I can tell you; I don't think we can bring everything round in a week, so I suppose to-morrow we had better be off.'

'Well, I like boating better than ditching, I can tell you,

Digitized by Google

Ready,' replied William. 'I sha'n't be sorry to leave that work to my father.'

'I suppose it must fall to him, sir; as he will, of course, prefer staying with Mrs Seagrave and the children.'

CHAPTER LII.

After breakfast next morning Ready proposed that he and William should take the boat and begin their labour of carrying the articles round from the cove to the bay where the house was, pointing out that there was not a day to be lost. Juno had, at his request, already baked a large piece of the pig for them to take with them, and boiled a piece of salt pork, so that they were all ready to start. Mr Seagrave agreed to work at the hedge and ditch round the yam-plantations during their absence.

Ready and William made every preparation for a continued absence. They took their blankets with them, and a small pot for cooking, and when all was prepared, they bade Mr and Mrs Seagrave farewell. Juno assisted to get the luggage down to the boat. They were now to pull to the bay and leave their luggage, and then to go round to the cove. As they shoved off, William took the dog Remus into the boat.

'Why do you take the dog, Master William? he will be of use here in keeping the pigs away, but of no use to us.'

'Yes, he will, Ready; I must take him; for I have an idea come into my head, so let me have my own way.'

'Well, Mr William, you can always have your own way as far as I'm concerned. Good-bye, Juno.'

'Good-bye, Massa Ready; good-bye, Mr William; mind you come back Saturday, and bring fish with you.'

'We'll bring you a *turtle*, Juno; for they will come to the island again soon, and then we will turn plenty more.'

They hoisted the sail, and as the breeze was fresh, were round to the bay in a very short time. They took their provisions and stores up to the house, and made fast the door, called the fowls, and gave them some of the damaged rice which Ready had brought round with him, and found, to their great delight, that

Digitized by Google

they had now upwards of forty chickens, all healthy and doing well; but as they had plenty of fresh provisions, it had been decided that they should not be touched as yet, for the eggs would be of more value to them than the fowls.

They then got into the boat again, and pulled away for the cove; the wind was fresh, and against them, so they had a long pull; but, as Ready observed, it was much better that it should be so, as, when the boat was loaded, they could very quickly sail back again to the bay.

As soon as they arrived at the cove, they lost no time in loading the boat; the nails and iron-work of every description, with the twine and tools which Ready had brought on shore, composed the major part of the first cargo; a cask of flour and a box of candles, with some bolts of canvas, filled the boat; so they shoved off, hoisted their sail, and in an hour had regained the bay, and passed through the reef.

'I'm glad that this cargo has arrived safe, Master William, for it is very valuable to us. Now we will take them all up, and that will be sufficient for to-day; to-morrow, if we can, we will make two trips; do you think you can manage it, sir?'

'Oh! yes; if we only start very early,' replied William; 'but now let us have our dinner, and carry the remainder of the things up afterwards.'

As they were eating their dinner, and William was giving the bones to the dog, Ready said, 'Pray, Master William, what was the idea in your head which made you bring Remus with you?'

'I will tell you, Ready; I may be wrong, but I think I am not; I mean him to carry a letter to mamma; you know that he always goes back when he is ordered. I have brought a piece of paper and pencil with me.'

William then wrote on the paper,—

'Dear Mamma:—We are quite well, and just returned with the first cargo quite safe.

'Your affectionate Son,

'WILLIAM.'

William tied the paper round the dog's neck with a piece of twine, and then calling him out of the house, said to him, 'Remus, *go back*, sir—*go back*, sir.' The dog looked wistfully at William,

Digitized by Google

as if not sure of what he was to do, but William took up a stone and pretended to throw it at the dog, who ran away a little distance, and then stopped.

'*Go back*, Remus—*go back*, sir.' William again pretended to throw the stone, repeating the order, and then the dog set off as fast as his legs could carry him through the cocoa-nut grove.

'And now,' said Ready, 'that we have finished our dinner, we will bring up the things.'

'Where shall we put them?'

'In the storehouse, Master William. It will be a good long job, for those kegs of nails and cases are very heavy, and will require both of us to carry them; so we must make a good many trips. However, we have three or four hours' daylight.'

CHAPTER LIII.

As soon as they had carried up the whole of the cargo, they secured the boat, and went up to the house to sleep. Just as they went in, Remus came bounding up to them with the letter round his neck.

'Here's the dog, Master William,' said Ready; 'he won't go home, after all.'

'How provoking; I made sure he would go back; I really am disappointed. We will give him nothing to eat, and then he will; but dear me, Ready, this is not the paper I tied round his neck. I think not. Let me see.' William took the paper, opened it, and read,

'Dear William:—Your letter arrived safe, and we are glad you are well. Write every day, and God bless you: it was very clever of you and Remus.

Your affectionate Mother,

'SELINA SEAGRAVE.'

'Well, it is very clever,' said Ready; 'I'm sure I had no idea he had gone; and his coming back again, too, when he was ordered.'

Digitized by Google

Dear Remus, good dog,' said William, caressing it; 'nice, good dog: now I'll give you a good supper, for you deserve it.'

The next morning they were off before breakfast, and as the wind was not so fresh, they had not so hard a pull. The boat was soon loaded, and they returned under sail. They then breakfasted, and having left the things they had brought on the beach, that they might lose no time, they set off again, and returned with another cargo two hours before dusk; this they landed, and then secured the boat.

The next day, as they had to take the two cargoes up to the house, they could only make one trip to the cove. The post was sent to the tents, and returned with the answer as before.

On Saturday they only made one trip, as they had to return to the tents, which they did by water, having first put a turtle into the boat; on their arrival, they found them all at the little harbour, waiting to receive them.

'Well, William, dear, you did keep your promise and send me a letter by post,' said Mrs Seagrave. 'How very delightful it is; I shall have no fear now when you are all away.'

'How does the ditch and hedge get on, Mr Seagrave?' asked Ready.

'Pretty well, Ready,' replied Mr Seagrave; 'I have nearly finished two sides. I think by the end of next week I shall have pretty well enclosed it.'

On the Monday morning, William and Ready went away in the boat, as before, to bring round the various articles from the cove. It had been arranged that they were not to return till the Saturday evening, and that the dog Remus was to bring intelligence of them and their welfare every afternoon. They worked hard during the week, and on Saturday they had completed their task; with the exception of a portion of the timbers of the ship, everything had been brought round, but had not been carried up to the storehouse, as that required more time.

On Saturday morning, they went for the last time to the cove, and Ready selected some heavy oak timber out of the quantity which was lying on the beach, part of which they put into the boat, and the remainder they towed astern. It was a heavy load, and although the wind was fair to sail back again to the bay, the boat went but slowly through the water.

Digitized by Google

'Well, Master William,' said Ready, 'we have done a good week's work, and I must say that it is high time that it is done; for the boat is in rather a crazy condition, and I must contrive to patch her up by and by, when there is time.'

'We shall not want to use her very much after this, Ready,' replied William; 'a few trips round to the little harbour will be all that will be required before we come back again to our old quarters.'

'That's true, Master William; but she leaks very much, and at all events I'll give her a coat of pitch as soon as possible. For a slight-built little thing as she is, she has done hard duty.'

'I suppose on Monday we shall set to at the storehouse, and alter it for our future residence?'

'Can't begin too soon, Master William,' replied Ready; 'I don't doubt but Mr Seagrave has finished the hedge and ditch round the yams by this time, and if so, I expect that Madam will not like to be left in the tents alone with Juno and the children, and so we shall all move back to the house again until we have altered the storehouse; I must say that I would rather that your mamma should remain in the tents until all was finished.'

'Because you are afraid of a visit from the savages, Ready?'

'I am, sir, and that's the truth.'

'But, Ready, if they do come, we shall see them coming, and would it not be better that we should all be together, even if we are obliged to conceal ourselves in consequence of not being prepared? Suppose the savages were to overrun the island, and find my mother, my little brother and sister, defenceless, at the time we were obliged to retreat from our house; how dreadful that would be!'

'But, Master William, I counted upon retreating to the tents.'

'So we can all together, Ready, unless we are surprised in the night.'

'That we must take care not to be. There's not three hours' dark in this season of the year. Well, Master William, I doubt not you may be right, and if they are all with us, Juno will be a great help, and we shall get through our work the faster.

'We had better let the question be decided by my father and mother.'

Digitized by Google

'Very true, Master William: here's the point at last. We will haul the timber on the beach, and then be off as fast as we can, for it is getting late.'

It was, indeed, much later than they had usually arrived at the little harbour, owing to the heavy load, which made the boat so long in coming round from the cove; and when they pulled in, they found Mr and Mrs Seagrave and the children all down, waiting for them.

CHAPTER LIV.

THE next day, being Sunday, was a day of repose, and as they had all worked so hard, they felt the luxury of a day of rest. In the afternoon, they agreed that on Monday they should make every preparation for quitting the tents, and returning to the house at the bay. They decided that the live stock should all be left there, as the pasturage was so plentiful and good, with the exception of one goat, which they would take back with them, to supply them with milk; and they also agreed that the tents should be left standing, with some cooking utensils, that in case William and Ready went round for the bananas or yams, or to examine the live stock, they should not be compelled to sleep in the open air, and should have the means of dressing their dinner. William and Ready were to carry the beds, &c., round to the bay in the boat, which they could do in two trips, and Mr and Mrs Seagrave, with the family, were to walk through the woods, after taking a very early breakfast.

The next morning was one of bustle; there was packing up and every preparation for departure. Juno was called here and called there, and was obliged to ask little Caroline to look after the kettle and call to her if it boiled over. Master Tommy, as usual, was in every one's way, and doing more harm than good in his attempts to assist; but, however, as he meant well, nobody scolded him.

At last, Ready, to get rid of him, sent him down with a large bundle to the beach. Tommy shouldered it with great importance, but when he came back, looking rather warm with the

Digitized by Google

exertion, and Ready asked him to take down another, he said he was too tired, and sat down very quietly till breakfast-time, before which everything was ready.

Mrs Seagrave and Juno packed up the breakfast and dinner things in a basket after breakfast was over, and then Mr and Mrs Seagrave and the family set off on their journey, accompanied by the dogs, through the cocoa-nut grove.

William and Ready lost no time in getting through their work. The crockery, kitchen utensils, tables, and chairs, were the first articles put into the boat. The goat was then led down, and they set off with a full load, and arrived at the bay long before the party who were walking through the wood. They landed the things on the beach, and then shoved off again to bring round the bedding, which was all that was left. By three o'clock in the afternoon they had arrived at the bay with their second and last load, and found that the other party had been there about an hour, and Mr Seagrave and Juno were very busy taking the articles up from the beach.

'Well, Master William,' said Ready, 'this is our last trip for some time, I expect; and so much the better, for our little boat must have something done to her as soon as I can find time.'

'Yes, indeed, Ready, she has done her work well. Do you know I feel as if I were coming home, now that we are back to the bay. I really feel quite glad that we have left the tents. I found the pigeons among the peas, Ready; so we must pick them as soon as we can. They have increased very much; I think there were near twenty of them. We shall have pigeon-pies next year, I expect,' replied William.

'If it pleases God that we live and do well,' replied Ready, who had his eyes fixed upon the sea.

Before night everything was in its place again in the house, and as comfortable as before, and as they were very tired, they went very early to bed, having first arranged what they should do in the morning. Mrs Seagrave said that she could attend to the cookery and the children, and that Juno was at their service, if they required her. At daylight, Ready and William went down to the turtle-pond and speared a turtle, for now the time was coming on for turning the turtle again, and the pond would soon be filled. Having cut it up and put a portion of it into the pot,

Digitized by Google

all ready for Mrs Seagrave, as soon as breakfast was over they proceeded to the storehouse in the grove.

After a little consultation with Mr Seagrave, Ready marked out a square of cocoa-nut trees surrounding the storehouse, so as to leave a space within them of about twenty yards each side, which they considered large enough for the enclosure. These cocoa-nut trees were to serve as the posts, between which were to be fixed other cocoa-nut trees cut down, and about fourteen feet high, so as to form a palisade or stockade, which could not be climbed over, and would protect them from any attack of the savages.

As soon as the line of trees had been marked out, they set to work cutting down all the trees within the line, and then outside to a distance of ten yards, so as to give them room for their work. Ready cut out cross-pieces, to nail from tree to tree, and now they found the advantage of having saved so many of the large spike nails, without which they never could have made so good or so quick a job of it. Mr Seagrave cut down trees, William and Juno sawed them off at a proper length with one of the cross-cut saws, and then carried them to Ready. They soon had more cut out than he could use, and then they dragged away the tops and branches, and piled them at a distance on the ground, to use as winter fuel, while Mr Seagrave helped Ready in fixing up the palisades. They worked very hard that day, and were not sorry to go to bed. Ready, however, took an opportunity to speak to William.

'I think, sir,' said he, 'that now we are here again, it will be necessary to keep a sort of night-watch, in case of accident. I shall not go to bed till it is quite dark, which it will be by nine o'clock, and shall have my glass to examine the offing the last thing. You see, sir, there is little fear of the savages coming here in the night-time, but they may just before night or very early in the morning, so one of us must be up again before day-break, that is, between two and three o'clock in the morning, to see if there is anything to be seen of them; if there is not, of course we may go to bed again, as they cannot arrive till many hours afterwards; and we must watch the wind and weather, if it is favourable for them to come to us, which, indeed, the wind will not be except at the commencement of the rainy season; but it may be very light, and then they would not care for its being

Digitized by Google

against them. I've been thinking of it, Master William, a great deal, and my idea is, that it will be at the beginning of the rainy season that we shall have a visit, if we have one at all; for you see that the wind don't blow regular from one quarter, as it does now, but is variable, and then they can make sail in their canoes, and come here easily, instead of pulling between thirty and forty miles, which is hard work against wind and current. Still, Master William, we must not be careless, and we must keep a good look-out even now. I don't want to fret your father and Mrs Seagrave with my fears on the subject, but I tell you what I really think, and what we ought to do.'

'I agree with you, Ready, and I will take care to be up before daybreak, and examine very carefully with the spy-glass as soon as the day dawns. You take the night part, and I will do the morning part of the watching.'

CHAPTER LV.

One day, as the party returned to dinner, Mrs Seagrave said with surprise, 'Why, was not Tommy with you?'

'No,' replied Mr Seagrave; 'he has not been near us all day; he went with us after breakfast, but did not remain a quarter of an hour.'

'No, Missy; I tell Massa Tommy to help carry cocoa-nut leaves, and then he go away directly.'

'I dare say he is picking up shells on the beach, ma'am,' replied Ready, 'or perhaps he is in the garden. I will go and see.'

'I will go with you, Ready,' said William.

'I see him—oh, mercy!—I see him,' said Juno, pointing with her finger; 'he in the boat, and boat go to sea.'

William ran off like the wind, followed close by Mr Seagrave and Ready, at a distance by Mrs Seagrave and Juno, the former dreadfully alarmed; indeed there was no time to be lost, for the wind was off the shore, and in a short time the boat would have been out to sea.

William, as soon as he arrived at the beach, threw off his hat and jacket, and dashed into the water. He was already up to

Digitized by Google

his middle, when old Ready, who had followed him, caught him by the arm and said,—

'Master William, go back immediately. I insist upon it. Your going can do no good, as you do not understand the thing so well as I do; and go I will; so there will be double risk for nothing. Mr Seagrave, order him back.'

'William,' said Mr Seagrave, 'come back immediately, I command you.'

William obeyed; but before he was clear of the water, old Ready had swum across to the first rocks on the reef, and was now dashing through the pools between the rocks, towards the boat.

'Oh! father,' said William, 'if that good old man is lost, I shall never forgive myself. I almost feel as if I did wrong to obey you. Look, father, one—two—three sharks, here close to us. He has no chance. See, he is again in deep water. God protect him!'

In the mean time, Mr Seagrave, whose wife was now by his side, and who was shuddering at the scene, after glancing his eye a moment at the sharks, which were within a few feet of the beach, had kept his gaze steadily upon Ready's movements. If he passed through the passage of deep water between the rocks, he might be considered safe, as the boat was now beating on a reef on the other side, where the water was shallow. It was a moment of intense anxiety. At last Ready had gained the reef, and had his hands upon the rocks, and was climbing on them.

'He is safe, is he not?' whispered Mrs Seagrave, faintly.

'Yes, now I think he is,' replied Mr Seagrave, as Ready had gained a footing on the rocks, where the water was but a little above his ancles. I think there is no deep water between him and the boat.'

In another minute Ready was over the rocks and had seized the gunnel of the boat.

'He is in the boat,' cried William. 'Thank God!'

'Yes; we must thank God, and that fervently,' replied Mr Seagrave. 'Look at those monsters,' continued he, pointing to the sharks; 'how quick they swim to and fro: they have scented their prey on the water. William, it is fortunate they are here: they might have been out there, when Ready passed through the deep water.'

'Yes, indeed, papa. See, he has the boat-hook, and is pushing

Digitized by Google

the boat off the reef into the deep water. Oh! he is quite safe now.'

Such, however, was not the case. The boat had been beating on the rocks of the reef, and had knocked a hole in her bottom, and as soon as Ready had forced the boat into deep water, she began to fill immediately. Ready pushed as hard as he could with the boat-hook, and tearing off his neckcloth, forced as much as he could of it into the hole. This saved them; but the boat was up to the thwarts with water, and the least motion on the part of Ready, or even Tommy, would have upset her immediately, and they had still to pass the deep water between the reef and the beach, where the sharks were swimming. Ready, who perceived his danger, called out to them to throw large stones at the sharks as fast as they could, to drive them away.

The pelting of the stones had the desired effect. The sharks swam away, and Ready passed through to the beach, and the boat grounded just as she was up to the gunnel in water, and about to turn over. He handed out Master Tommy, who was so dreadfully frightened, that he could not cry, but remained as pale as a sheet, and his mouth and eyes wide open.

As soon as Ready landed, William sprung into his arms, crying, 'Thank God you are safe, Ready.' Mr and Mrs Seagrave, each took his hand and shook it heartily. At last, Mrs Seagrave, overpowered by her feelings, sank her head upon William's shoulder, and burst into tears. Juno, after smiling at Ready, took Tommy by the hand, and led him away, saying, 'Come along, you nasty naughty boy. You get fine whipping to-night, soon as all the work is over.' Whereupon Tommy set up a miserable howling, which he never left off until long after he was in the house.

That evening the prayers were more than usually solemn, and the thanksgivings more heartfelt and sincere. Exhausted with the exciting scene of the day, they all retired early to bed.

CHAPTER LVI.

When Tommy was questioned on the following morning as to his inducement to get into the boat, to their great surprise he

Digitized by Google

replied, that he wanted to go round to the tents again, to see if the bananas were ripe; that he intended to eat some of them, and be back before dinner-time, that he might not be found out.

'I suspect, Master Tommy, you would have been very hungry before you ate any bananas if we had not perceived you,' said Ready.

'I won't go into the boat any more,' said Tommy.

The stockade was now almost finished; the door was the occasion of a good deal of consultation; at last it was agreed that it would be better to have a door of stout oak plank, but with second door-posts inside, about a foot apart from the door, between which could be inserted short poles one above the other, so as to barricade it within when required. This would make the door as strong as any other portion of the stockade. As soon as this was all complete, the storehouse was to be altered for a dwelling-house, by taking away the wattles of cocoa-nut boughs on the sides, and filling them up with logs of cocoa-nut trees.

Before the week was ended, the stockade and door were complete, and they now began to fell trees, to form the sides of the house. This was rapid work; and while Mr Seagrave, William, and Juno felled the trees, and brought them on the wheels to the side of the stockade, all ready cut to their proper lengths, Ready was employed in flooring the house with a part of the deal planks which they had brought round from the cove. But this week they were obliged to break off for two days, to collect all their crops from the garden: as soon as this was done, they again set to work.

A fortnight more passed away in continual hard work, but the house was at last finished, and very complete, compared to the one they were residing in. It was much larger, and divided into three rooms by the deal planking: the middle room which the door opened into was the sitting and eating-room, with a window behind: the two side-rooms were sleeping-rooms, one for Mrs Seagrave and the children, and the other for the male portion of the family. This made it much more comfortable and complete.

'See, Master William,' said Ready, when they were alone, 'what we have been able to do by means of those deal planks;

Digitized by Google

why, to have floored this house, and run up the partitions, would have taken us half a year, if we had had to saw the wood.'

'And what do you propose to do with the old house?' said William.

'We had better put some of our stores of least value in it for the present, until we can fit up another storehouse inside the stockade.'

'Then we'll put those casks in, for they take up a great deal of room.'

'All but that large one, Master William; we shall want that; I shall fix it up in a corner.'

'What for, Ready?'

'To put water in, Master William.'

'But we are closer to the spring than we were at the other house.'

'I know that; but, perhaps, we may not be able to go out of the stockade, and then we shall want water. You don't know how anxious I am to see them all inside of this defence, William. I shall not be happy until they are.'

'But why should we not come in, Ready?'

'Why, sir, as there is still plenty of work, I do not like to press the matter, lest your mamma should be fidgeted, and think there was danger; but, Master William, danger there is; I have a kind of forewarning of it. I wish you would propose that they should come in at once; the standing bed-places are all ready, except the canvas, and I shall nail on new by to-night.'

In consequence of this conversation, William proposed at dinner-time that the next day they should go into the new house, as it was so much more handy to work there and live there at the same time. Mr Seagrave was of the same opinion, but Mrs Seagrave thought it better that everything should be tidy first.

'Why, ma'am,' said Ready, 'the only way to get things tidy is to go yourself, and make them so. Nothing will ever be in its place unless you are there to put it in.'

'Well, Ready; you are the best judge; to-morrow we will take up our quarters in the stockade.'

'Thank God!' muttered old Ready very softly. William only, who was next to him, heard what he said.

Digitized by Google

The next day was fully employed in changing their residence, and shifting over the bedding and utensils; and that night they slept within the stockade. Ready had run up a very neat little out-house of plank, as a kitchen for Juno, and another week was fully employed as follows: the stores were divided; those of least consequence, and the salt provisions, flour, and the garden produce, &c., were put into the old house; the casks of powder and most of the cartridges were also put there for security; but a cask of beef, of pork, and flour, all the iron-work and nails, canvas, &c., were stowed away for the present under the new house, which had, when built as a storehouse, been raised four feet from the ground to make a shelter for the stock. Ready also took care, by degrees, to fill the large water-butt full of water, and had fixed into the bottom a spigot for drawing the water off.

'Well, Mr Seagrave,' said Ready on the Saturday, 'we have done a good many hard weeks' work lately; but this is the last of them. William and I must go and turn some turtle if we can, for the season is getting late for them, and I must repair the boat, so that we may take a trip round to examine how the stock and yams get on.'

'And the bananas and the guavas,' said Tommy.

'Why, we have quite forgotten all about them,' observed Mrs Seagrave.

'Yes, ma'am; we have been so busy, that it is no wonder; however, there may be some left yet, and I will go round as soon as the boat is able to swim, and bring all I can find.'

'We must put our seeds and potatoes in before the rainy season, Ready.'

'It will be better, sir, if we can find time, as we shall not have much more fine weather now; at all events, we can get them in at intervals when the weather is fine; now I shall go my rounds for turtle.'

William and Ready went down to the beach, but meeting Juno coming from the kitchen, Ready desired her to collect as much fuel as she could, and stack it up in a corner inside of the stockade, as it would be more handy.

'Yes, Massa Ready,' replied Juno; 'I understand; nothing like being all ready case of accident.'

Digitized by Google

William and Ready succeeded in turning six more turtles to add to their stock, and having taken a careful survey with the telescope, they came back, fastened the door of the stockade, and went to bed.

CHAPTER LVII.

ANOTHER week passed away, during which Ready repaired the boat, and William and Mr Seagrave were employed in digging up the garden. It was also a very busy week at the house, as they had not washed linen for some time. Mrs Seagrave and Juno, and even little Caroline, were hard at work, and Master Tommy was more useful than ever he had been, going for the water as they required it, and watching little Albert. Indeed, he was so active, that Mrs Seagrave praised him before his papa, and Master Tommy was quite proud.

On the Monday, William and Ready set off in the boat to the little harbour, and found all the stock doing well, and promising to increase. Many of the bananas and guavas had ripened and withered, but there were enough left to fill the boat half full. The yams had not been broken in upon by the pigs, and the tents were in good order.

'We cannot do better than to leave the stock where it is at present, Master William; they can run into the cocoa-nut grove for shelter if there is a storm, and there is feed enough for ten times as many.'

'I think so too.

'But in a few days we must come round again for the tents; we must not leave them here the whole rainy season. Now, sir, shall we go back?'

'Yes; at all events, Tommy will be delighted with our cargo. But will you not dig up a few yams first?'

'I had quite forgotten it, Master William. I will go for the spade; we left one in the nearest tent.'

Having procured the yams, they set off on their return. Before they arrived at the bay, the sky clouded over, and threatened a storm. It did not, however, rain till after they had

Digitized by Google

landed, when a smart shower announced the commencement of the rainy season.

The following day was beautifully fine, and everything appeared refreshed by the rain which had fallen. It was, however, agreed that Ready and William should go round the next morning, bring home the tents, and as many yams as the boat could carry. William and Ready went out at night as usual, when Ready observed that the wind had chopped round to the eastward.

'That will be bad for us to-morrow, Ready,' replied William. 'We may sail to the harbour, but we shall have to pull back with the loaded boat.'

The next morning, just before the day dawned, Ready and William unfastened the door of the stockade, and went down to the beach. The wind was still to the eastward, and blowing rather fresh, and the sky was cloudy. As the sun rose, Ready, as usual, had his telescope with him, and looked through it at the offing to the eastward.

'Do you see anything, Ready, that you look so long in that direction?' asked William.

'Either my old eyes deceive me, or I fear that I do,' replied Ready; 'but a few minutes more will decide.'

There was a bank of clouds on the horizon to the eastward; but as soon as the sun had risen above them, Ready, who had the telescope fixed in the same direction, said—

'Yes, Master William, I am right. I thought that those dark patches I saw were their brown grass sails.'

'Sails of what, Ready?' said William, hastily.

'Of the Indian canoes, Master William. Take the glass, and look yourself.'

'Why, there are twenty or thirty of them, Ready, at least.'

'And each with twenty or thirty men in them too, Master William.'

'How fast they come down, Ready! why they will be here in an hour.'

'No, sir, nor in two hours either; those are very large canoes. However, there is no time to be lost. While I watch them for a few minutes till I make them more clearly out, do you run up to the house and beckon your father to come down to me; and then,

Digitized by Google

Master William, get all the muskets ready, and bring the casks of powder and of made-up cartridges from the old house into the stockade. Call Juno, and she will help you. After you have done that, you had better come down and join us.'

In a very few minutes after William ran up to the house, Mr Seagrave made his appearance.

'Ready, there is danger, I'm sure; William would not tell me, I presume, because he was afraid of alarming his mother. What is it?'

'It is, Mr Seagrave, that the savages are now coming down upon us in large force; perhaps five or six hundred of them; and that we shall have to defend ourselves with all our might and main.'

'Well, Ready, we must put our trust in the Lord, and do our best; I will second you to the utmost of my power, and William, I'm sure, will do his duty.'

'I think, sir, we had better not wait here any more, as we have not long to prepare for them. We have only to fix up some of our strong deal planks on the inside of the stockade for us to stand upon when we are attacked, that we may see what the enemy is about, and be able to fire upon them. But first we had better go to the old house, and take out what provisions and other articles we shall most want, and roll the casks into the stockade, for to the old house they will go first, and perhaps destroy everything in it. The casks they certainly will, for the sake of the iron hoops. An hour's work will do a great deal, for the distance is not very great. I believe we have everything we want in the stockade; Juno has her fuel, the large butt of water will last us two or three weeks at least, and if we have time, we will get the wheels down, and spear a couple of turtles for fresh provisions.'

'We hardly need think of turtle just now, Ready.'

'Why not, sir? It's as well to have them as to leave them for the savages to eat for us.'

This conversation passed as they walked up to the house. As soon as they arrived, they found William and Juno had just brought in the powder and cartridges. Mr Seagrave went in to break the matter to his wife, who, he feared, would be much alarmed.

Digitized by Google

'I was told that I had to expect this, my dear,' replied Mrs Seagrave, 'so that it has not come upon me altogether unawares; and anything that a poor weak woman can do, I will. I feel that I have no want of courage to defend my children.'

CHAPTER LVIII.

As they could have a very good view of the canoes from where the old house stood, Ready examined them with his glass every time that he returned from rolling up a cask to the stockade. Every one worked hard; even Mrs Seagrave did all she could, either assisting in rolling the casks, or carrying up what she was able to lift. In an hour they had got into the stockade all that they most cared for, and the canoes were still about six or seven miles off.

'We have a good hour before they arrive, sir,' said Ready, 'and even then the reefs will puzzle them not a little; I doubt if they are disembarked under two hours. Juno, go for the wheels, and William, come down with the spear, and we will have some of the turtle into the stockade. Mr Seagrave, I do not require your assistance, so if you will have the kindness to get out the muskets, and examine the flints, it will be as well.'

'Yes, and then you have to load them,' replied Mrs Seagrave. 'Juno and I can do that, at all events, ready for you to fire them.'

In half an hour six turtle were brought up by Juno and William, and then Ready followed them into the stockade.

They then rolled the casks and upheaded them by the sides of the stockade, and fixed up deal planks to stand upon, just high enough to enable them to see over the top of the palisades, and to fire at the enemy. Mrs Seagrave had been shown how to load a musket, and Juno was now taught the same.'

'Now, sir, we are all prepared,' said old Ready, 'and madam and Juno can go and look a little after the children, and get breakfast.'

As soon as the children were dressed, Mr Seagrave called Ready, who was outside, watching the canoes, and they went to

Digitized by Google

their morning devotions and prayed heartily for succour in this time of need.

'This suspense is worse than all,' said Mrs Seagrave. 'I wish now that they were come.'

'Shall I go to Ready, and hear his report, my dear? I will not be away three minutes.'

In a short time Mr Seagrave returned, saying that the canoes were close to the beach, that the savages evidently had a knowledge of the passages through the reefs, as they had steered right in, and had lowered their sails; that Ready and William were on the look-out, but concealed behind the cocoa-nut trees.

During this conversation between Mr and Mrs Seagrave within the stockade, William and Ready were watching the motions of the savages, a large portion of whom had landed out of ten of the canoes, and the others were following their example as fast as they could, forcing their way through the reefs. The savages were all painted, with their war-cloaks and feathers on, and armed with spears and clubs, evidently having come with no peaceable intentions. At first they occupied themselves with beaching the canoes, and as they were very large and heavy, this was a work of some few minutes' employment for the whole of them.

Another half-minute, and William and Ready arrived at the door of the stockade; they entered, shut the door, and then barricaded it with the cocoa-nut poles which they had fitted to the inner door-posts.

CHAPTER LIX.

The loud yells of the savages struck terror into the heart of Mrs Seagrave; it was well that she had not seen their painted bodies and fierce appearance, or she would have been much more alarmed. Little Albert and Caroline clung round her neck with terror in their faces; they did not cry, but looked round and round to see from whence the horrid noise proceeded, and then clung faster to their mother. Master Tommy was very busy finishing all the breakfast which had been left, for there was no

Digitized by Google

one to check him as usual; Juno was busy outside, and was very active and courageous. Mr Seagrave had been employed making the holes between the palisades large enough to admit the barrels of the muskets, so that they could fire at the savages without being exposed; while William and Ready, with their muskets loaded, were on the look-out for their approach.

'They are busy with the old house just now, sir,' observed Ready, 'but that won't detain them long.'

'Here they come,' replied William. 'Take care they don't hit you, Ready.'

Ready now stood upon the plank within, so as to show himself to the savages, who gave a tremendous yell, and, as they advanced, a dozen spears were thrown at him with so true an aim that, had he not instantly dodged behind the stockade, he must have been killed. Three or four spears remained quivering in the palisades, just below the top; the others went over it, and fell down inside of the stockade, at the further end.

'Now, Master William, take good aim;' but before William could fire, Mr Seagrave, who had agreed to be stationed at the corner so that he might see if the savages went round to the other side, fired his musket, and the tall chief fell to the ground.

Ready and William also fired, and two more of the savages were seen to drop, amidst the yells of their companions. Juno handed up the other muskets which were ready loaded, and took those discharged, and Mrs Seagrave turned the key of the door upon them, and hastened to assist Juno in reloading the muskets.

The spears now rushed through the air, and it was well that they could fire from the stockade without exposing their persons, or they would have had but little chance. The yells increased, and the savages now began to attack on every quarter; the most active, who climbed like cats, actually succeeded in gaining the top of the palisades, but, as soon as their heads appeared above, they were fired at with so true an aim that they dropped down dead outside. This combat lasted for more than an hour, when the savages, having lost a great many men, drew off from the assault, and the parties within the stockade had time to breathe.

'They have not gained much in this bout, at all events,' said Ready; 'it was well fought on our side, and, Master William,

Digitized by Google

you certainly behaved as if you had been brought up to it; I don't think you ever missed your man once.'

'Do you think they will go away now?' said Mrs Seagrave.

'Oh, no, madam, not yet; they will try us every way before they leave us. You see these are very brave men, and it is clear that they know what gunpowder is, or they would have been more astonished.'

'Are they all gone, Ready?' said William, who had come down from the plank to his mother.

'No, sir; I see them between the trees now; they are sitting round in a circle, and, I suppose, making speeches: it is the custom of these people.'

'Well, I'm very thirsty, at all events,' said William; 'Juno, bring me a little water.'

Juno went to the water-tub, to comply with William's request, and in a few minutes afterwards came back in great consternation.

'Oh, Massa! oh, Missy! no water; water all gone.'

'Water all gone!' cried Ready and all of them in a breath.

'Missy, I tink I know now,' said Juno; 'you remember you send Massa Tommy, the two or three days we wash, to fetch water from well in little bucket. You know how soon he come back, and how you say what good boy he was, and how you tell Massa Seagrave when he come to dinner. Now, Missy, I quite certain Massa Tommy no take trouble to go to well, but fetch water from tub all the while, and so he empty it.'

Juno's suspicions were but too true. Tommy, pleased with the praise of being so quick in bringing the water, had taken out the spigot of the cask, and drawn it all off. He was now crying, and promising not to take the water again.

'If I had but a little for the children, I should not care,' observed Mrs Seagrave; 'but to see those poor things suffer—is there not a drop left, Juno, anywhere?'

Juno shook her head. 'All gone, Missy; none nowhere.'

'I wish the savages would come on again,' observed William; 'for the sooner they come, the sooner the affair will be decided.'

'I doubt if they will to-day, sir; at night-time I think it very probable, and I fear the night attack more than the day. We must make preparations for it.'

Digitized by Google

'Why, what can we do, Ready?'

'In the first place, sir, by nailing planks from cocoa-nut tree to cocoa-nut tree above the present stockade, we may make a great portion of it much higher, and more difficult to climb over. Some of them were nearly in this time. If we do that, we shall not have so large a space to watch over and defend; and then we must contrive to have a large fire ready for lighting, that we may not have to fight altogether in the dark. It will give them some advantage in looking through the palisades, and seeing where we are, but they cannot well drive their spears through, so it is no great matter. We must make the fire in the centre of the stockade, and have plenty of tar in it, to make it burn bright, and we must not, of course, light it until after we are attacked. We shall then see where they are trying for an entrance, and where to aim with our muskets.'

As Ready had supposed, no further attack was made by the savages on that day, and he, William, and Mr Seagrave were very busy making their arrangements; they nailed the planks on the trunks of the trees above the stockade, so as to make three sides of the stockade at least five feet higher, and almost impossible to climb up; and they prepared a large fire in a tar-barrel full of cocoa-nut leaves mixed with wood and tar, so as to burn fiercely. Dinner or supper they had none, for there was nothing but salt pork and beef and live turtle, and, by Ready's advice, they did not eat, as it would only increase their desire to drink.

The poor children suffered much; little Albert wailed and cried for 'water, water;' Caroline knew that there was none, and was quiet, poor little girl, although she suffered much; as for Tommy, the author of all this misery, he was the most impatient, and roared for some time, till William, quite angry at his behaviour, gave him a smart box on the ear, and he reduced his roar to a whimper, from fear of receiving another.

CHAPTER LX.

BUT the moaning of the children was very soon after dusk drowned by the yells of the savages, who now advanced to the night attack.

Digitized by Google

Every part of the stockade was at once assailed, and their attempts now made were to climb into it; a few spears were occasionally thrown, but it was evident that the object was to obtain an entrance by dint of numbers. It was well that Ready had taken the precaution of nailing the deal planks above the original stockade, or there is little doubt but that the savages would have gained their object; as it was, before the flames of the fire, which Juno had lighted by Ready's order, gave them sufficient light, three or four savages had climbed up and had been shot by William and Mr Seagrave, as they were on the top of the stockade.

When the fire burnt brightly, the savages outside were more easily aimed at, and a great many fell in their attempts to get over. The attack continued more than an hour, when at last, satisfied that they could not succeed, the savages once more withdrew, carrying with them, as before, their dead and wounded.

'I trust that they will now reëmbark, and leave the island,' said Mr Seagrave to Ready.

'I only wish they may, sir; it is not at all impossible; but there is no saying. You see, sir, that cocoa-nut tree,' continued Ready, pointing to one of those to which the palisades were fastened, 'is much taller than any of the others; now, by driving spike-nails into the trunk at about a foot apart, we might ascend it with ease, and it would command a view of the whole bay; we then could know what the enemy were about.'

Mr Seagrave then went into the house; Ready desired William to lie down and sleep for two or three hours, as he would watch. In the morning, when Mr Seagrave came out, he would have a little sleep himself.

'I can't sleep, Ready. I'm mad with thirst,' replied William.

In the mean time Mr Seagrave found the children still crying for water, notwithstanding the coaxing and soothing of Mrs Seagrave, who was shedding tears as she hung over poor little Albert. Juno had gone out, and had dug with a spade as deep as she could, with a faint hope that some might be found, but in vain, and she had just returned mournful and disconsolate. Little Caroline only drooped, and said nothing. Mr Seagrave remained for two or three hours with his wife, assisting her in pacifying the

Digitized by Google

children, and soothing her to the utmost of his power; at last he went out and found old Ready on the watch.

'I have come out to take the watch, Ready. Will you not sleep for a while?'

'I will, sir, if you please, take a little sleep. Call me in two hours; it will then be daylight, and I can go to work, and you can get some repose yourself.'

'I am too anxious to sleep; I think so, at least.'

'Master William said he was too thirsty to sleep, sir; but, poor fellow, he is now fast enough.'

'I trust that boy will be spared, Ready.'

'I hope so too; for he is a noble fellow: but we are all in the hands of the Almighty. Good night, sir.'

'Good night, Ready.'

At daylight Ready woke up and relieved Mr Seagrave, who did not return to the house, but lay down on the cocoa-nut boughs, where Ready had been lying by the side of William. As soon as Ready had got out the spike-nails and hammer, he summoned William to his assistance, and they commenced driving them into the cocoa-nut tree, one looking out, in case of the savages approaching, while the other was at work. In less than an hour they had gained the top of the tree close to the boughs, and had a very commanding view of the bay, as well as inland. William, who was driving the last dozen spikes, took a survey, and then came down to Ready.

'I can see everything, Ready: they have pulled down the old house altogether, and are most of them lying down outside, covered up with their war-cloaks; some women are walking to and fro from the canoes, which are lying on the beach where they first landed.'

'They have pulled down the house to obtain the iron nails, I have no doubt,' replied Ready. 'Did you see any of their dead?'

'No; I did not look about very much, but I will go up again directly. I came down because my hands were jarred with hammering, and the hammer was so heavy to carry. In a minute or two I shall go up light enough. My lips are burning, Ready, and swelled; the skin is peeling off. I had no idea that want of water would have been so dreadful.'

Digitized by Google

I was in hopes of finding a cocoa-nut or two on the tree, but there was not one.'

'And if you had found one, it would not have had any milk in it at this season of the year. However, Master William, if the savages do not go away to-day, something must be done. I wish now that you would go up again, and see if they are not stirring.'

William again mounted to the top of the tree, and remained up for some minutes; when he came down, he said, 'They are all up now, and swarming like bees. I counted two hundred and sixty of the men, in their war-cloaks and feather head-dresses; the women are passing to and fro from the well with water; there is nobody at the canoes except eight or ten women, who are beating their heads, I think, or doing something of the kind. I could not make it out well, but they seem all doing the same thing.'

'I know what they are about, Master William; they are cutting themselves with knives or other sharp instruments. It is the custom of these people. The dead are all put into the canoes, and these women are lamenting over them; perhaps they are going away, since the dead are in the canoes; but there is no saying.

CHAPTER LXI.

The second day was passed in keeping a look-out upon the savages, and awaiting a fresh attack. They could perceive from the top of the cocoa-nut tree that the savages held a council of war in the forenoon, sitting round in a large circle, while one got up in the centre, and made a speech, flourishing his club and spear while he spoke. In the afternoon the council broke up, and the savages were observed to be very busy in all directions, cutting down the cocoa-nut trees, and collecting all the brushwood.

Ready watched them for a long while, and at last came down a little before sunset. 'Mr Seagrave,' said he, 'we shall have, in my opinion, no attack this night, but to-morrow we must expect something very serious; the savages are cutting down the trees, and making large faggots; they do not get on very fast, because their hatchets are made of stone and don't cut very well; but perseverance and numbers will effect everything.'

Digitized by Google

'But what do you imagine to be their object, Ready, in cutting down trees, and making the faggots?'

'Either, sir, to pile them up outside the palisades, so large as to be able to walk up upon them, or else to pile them up to set fire to them, and burn us out.'

'Do you think they will succeed?'

'We must hope for the best, and do our best, Mr Seagrave,' replied Ready; 'and recollect that, should anything happen to me during the conflict, if there is any chance of your being overpowered, you must take advantage of the smoke, to escape into the woods, and find your way to the tents. I have no doubt that you will be able to do that; of course the attack will be to windward, if they use fire, and you must try and escape to leeward; I have shown William how to force a palisade if necessary. The savages, if they get possession, will not think of looking for you at first, and, perhaps, when they have obtained all that the house contains, not even afterwards.'

Ready then told Mr Seagrave that he would keep the watch, and call him at twelve o'clock. During these two days they had eaten very little; a turtle had been killed, and pieces fried; but eating only added to their thirst, and even the children refused the meat. The sufferings were now really dreadful, and poor Mrs Seagrave was almost frantic.

As soon as Mr Seagrave had gone into the house, Ready called William, and said, 'Master William, water we must have. I cannot bear to see the agony of the poor children, and the state of mind which your poor mother is in; and more, without water we never shall be able to beat off the savages to-morrow. We shall literally die of choking in the smoke, if they use fire. Now, William, I intend to take one of the seven-gallon barricos, and go down to the well for water. I may succeed, and I may not, but attempt it I must; and if I fall, it cannot be helped.'

Ready went for the barrico, a little cask, which held six or seven gallons of water. He put on the head-dress and war-cloak of the savage who fell dead inside the stockade, and, taking the barrico on his shoulder, and the spear in his hand, the poles which barred the door were softly removed by William, and after ascertaining that no one was concealed beneath the palisades, Ready pressed William's hand, and set off across the

Digitized by Google

cleared space outside of the stockade, and gained the cocoa-nut trees. William, as directed, closed the door, passed one pole through the inner door-posts for security, and remained on the watch. He was in an awful state of suspense, listening to the slightest noise, even the slight rustling by the wind of the cocoa-nut boughs above him made him start: there he continued for some minutes, his gun ready cocked by his side.

At last he thought he heard footsteps coming very softly. Yes, it was so. Ready was returning, and without any accident. William had his hand upon the pole, to slip it on one side, and open the door, when he heard a scuffle and a fall close to the door. He immediately threw down the pole, and opened it, just as Ready called him by name. William seized his musket, and sprang out; he found Ready struggling with a savage, who was uppermost, and with his spear at Ready's breast. In a second William levelled and fired, and the savage fell dead by the side of Ready.

'Take the water in quick, William,' said Ready in a faint voice; 'I will contrive to crawl in if I can.'

William caught up the barrico of water, and took it in; he then hastened to Ready, who was on his knees. Mr Seagrave, hearing the musket fired, had run out, and finding the stockade door open, followed William, and seeing him endeavouring to support Ready, caught hold of his other arm, and they led him tottering into the stockade: the door was then immediately secured, and they went to his assistance.

'Are you hurt, Ready?' said William.

'Yes, dear boy, yes; hurt to death, I fear: his spear went through my breast. Water, quick, water!'

'Alas! that we had some!' said Mr Seagrave.

'We have, papa,' replied William; 'but it has cost us dearly.'

William ran for a pannikin, and taking out the bung, poured some water out of the barrico, and gave it to Ready, who drank it with eagerness.

'Now, William, lay me down on these cocoa-nut boughs; go and give some water to the others, and when you have all drunk, then come to me again. Don't tell Mrs Seagrave that I'm hurt. Do as I beg of you.'

'Papa, take the water—do, pray,' replied William; 'I cannot leave Ready.'

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER LXII.

After returning twice for water, to satisfy those in the house, Mr Seagrave came to the assistance of William, who had been removing Ready's clothes to ascertain the nature and extent of the wound which he had received.

'We had better move him to where the other cocoa-nut boughs lie; he will be more comfortable there,' said William.

Ready whispered, 'More water.' William gave him some more, and then, with the assistance of his father, Ready was removed to a more comfortable place. As soon as they had laid him there, Ready turned on his side, and threw up a quantity of blood.

'I am better now,' said he in a low voice; 'bind up the wound, William; an old man like me has not much blood to spare.'

Mr Seagrave and William then opened his shirt, and examined the wound: the spear had gone deep into the lungs. William threw off his own shirt, tore it up into strips, and then bound up the wound so as to stop the effusion of blood.

Ready, who at first appeared much exhausted with being moved about, gradually recovered so as to be able to speak in a low voice, when Mrs Seagrave came out of the house.

'Where is that brave, kind man?' cried she, 'that I may bless him and thank him.'

'He is hurt, my dear; I am afraid very much hurt,' said Mr Seagrave; 'I did not tell you at the time.'

Mr Seagrave first briefly related what had occurred, and then led her to where old Ready was lying. Mrs Seagrave knelt by his side, took his hand, and burst into tears.

'Dear, good old man, whatever may be our fates, and that is for the Almighty to decide for us, as long as I have life, what you have done for me and mine shall never be forgotten.'

Mrs Seagrave then bent over him, and, kissing his forehead, rose from her knees, and retired weeping into the house.

William went softly up to Ready, and found that the old man was dozing, if not asleep; he did not therefore disturb him, but returned to his father; they carried the barrico of water into

Digitized by Google

the house, and put it in Mrs Seagrave's charge, that it might not be wasted; and now that their thirst had been appeased, they all felt the calls of hunger. Juno and William went and cut off steaks from the turtle, and fried them; they all made a hearty meal, and perhaps never had they taken one with so much relish in their lives.

It was nearly daylight, when William, who had several times been softly up to Ready to ascertain whether he slept or not, found him with his eyes open.

'How do you find yourself, Ready?' said William.

'I am quiet and easy, William, and without much pain; but I think I am sinking, and shall not last long. Recollect that if you are obliged to escape from the stockade, William, you take no heed of me, but leave me where I am. I cannot live, and were you to move me, I should only die the sooner.'

William hesitated.

'I point out to you your duty, Master William, I know what your feelings are, but you must not give way to them; promise me this, or you will make me very miserable.'

William squeezed Ready's hand; his heart was too full to speak.

'They will come at daylight, William—I think so at least; you have not much time to spare; climb to the look-out, and wait there till day dawns; watch them as long as you can in safety, and then come down, to tell me what you have seen.'

Ready's voice became faint after this exertion of speaking so much.

He motioned to William, who immediately climbed up the cocoa-nut tree, and waited there till daylight.

At the dawn of day, he perceived that the savages were at work, that they had collected all the faggots together opposite to where the old house had stood, and were very busy in making arrangements for the attack. At last, he perceived that they every one shouldered a faggot, and commenced their advance towards the stockade; William immediately descended from the tree, and called his father, who was talking with Mrs Seagrave. The muskets were all loaded, and Mrs Seagrave and Juno took their posts below the planking, to reload them as fast as they were fired.

Digitized by Google

'We must fire upon them as soon as we are sure of not missing them, William,' said Mr Seagrave, 'for the more we check their advance the better.'

When the first savages were within fifty yards, they both fired, and two of the men dropped; and they continued to fire as their assailants came up, with great success for the first ten minutes; after which the savages advanced in a larger body, and took the precaution to hold the faggots in front of them, for some protection as they approached. By these means they gained the stockade in safety, and commenced laying their faggots. Mr Seagrave and William still kept up an incessant fire upon them, but not with so much success as before.

Although many fell, the faggots were gradually heaped up, till they almost reached to the holes between the palisades, through which they pointed their muskets; and as the savages contrived to slope them down from the stockade to the ground, it was evident that they meant to mount up and take them by escalade. At last, it appeared as if all the faggots had been placed, and the savages retired further back, to where the cocoa-nut trees were still standing.

'They have gone away, father,' said William; 'but they will come again, and I fear it is all over with us.'

'I should like to take a farewell embrace of your dear mother,' said Mr Seagrave; 'but no; it will be weakness just now. I had better not. Here they come, William, in a swarm. Well, God bless you, my boy; we shall all, I trust, meet in heaven.'

The whole body of savages were now advancing from the cocoa-nut wood in a solid mass; they raised a yell, which struck terror into the hearts of Mrs Seagrave and Juno, yet they flinched not. The savages were again within fifty yards of them, when the fire was opened upon them; the fire was answered by loud yells, and the savages had already reached to the bottom of the sloping pile of faggots, when the yells and the reports of the muskets were drowned by a much louder report, followed by the crackling and breaking of the cocoa-nut trees, which made both parties start with surprise; another and another followed, the ground was ploughed up, and the savages fell in numbers.

Digitized by Google

'It must be the cannon of a ship, father,' said William; 'we are saved—we are saved!'

'It can be nothing else; we are saved, and by a miracle,' replied Mr Seagrave in utter astonishment.

The savages paused in the advance, quite stupefied; again, again, again, the report of the loud guns boomed through the air, and the round shot and grape came whizzing and tearing through the cocoa-nut grove: at this last broadside, the savages turned and fled towards their canoes; not one was left to be seen.

'We are saved!' cried Mr Seagrave, leaping off the plank and embracing his wife, who sank down on her knees, and held up her clasped hands in thankfulness to Heaven.

William had hastened up to the look-out on the cocoa-nut tree, and now cried out to them below, as the guns were again discharged—

'A large schooner, father; she is firing at the savages, who are at the canoes; they are falling in every direction: some have plunged into the water; there is a boatful of armed men coming on shore; they are close to the beach, by the garden point. Three of the canoes have got off full of men; there go the guns again; two of the canoes are sunk, father; the boat has landed, and the people are coming up this way.' William then descended from the look-out as fast as he could.

As soon as he was down, he commenced unbarring the door of the stockade. He pulled out the last pole just as he heard the feet of their deliverers outside. He threw open the door, and a second after found himself in the arms of Captain Osborn.

CHAPTER LXIII.

Before we wind up this history, it will be as well to state to my young readers how it was that Captain Osborn made his appearance at so fortunate a moment. It will be recollected how a brig came off the island some months before this, and the great disappointment that the party on the island experienced in her not making her appearance again, especially as they had seen the flags which they had hoisted.

Digitized by Google

The fact was, that those on board of the brig had not only seen their signals, but had read the name of the 'Pacific' upon the flag hoisted; but the heavy gale which came on drove them so far to the southward, that the master of the brig did not consider that he should do his duty to his owners, if he lost so much time in beating up for the island again; the cargo which he had on board was one which would lose in value if it were not one of the first in the market. He therefore decided upon making all sail for Sydney, to which port he was bound.

When Captain Osborn was put into the boat by Mackintosh and the seamen of the 'Pacific,' he was still insensible; but he gradually recovered, and after a stormy night, during which the men had the greatest difficulty in keeping the boat afloat, Captain Osborn was so far recovered as to hear from Mackintosh what had taken place, and why it was that he found himself in an open boat at sea. The next morning the wind moderated, and they were fortunate enough to fall in with a vessel bound to Van Diemen's Land, which took them all on board.

From the account given by Mackintosh, Captain Osborn had no doubt in his mind but that the Seagrave family had perished, and the loss of the vessel, with them on board, was duly reported to the owners. When at Van Diemen's Land, Captain Osborn was so much taken with the beauty and fertility of the country, and perhaps not so well inclined to go to sea again after such danger as he had incurred in the last voyage, that he resolved to purchase land and settle there. He did so, and had already stocked his farm with cattle, and had gone round to Sydney in a schooner to await the arrival of a large order from England which he had sent for, when the brig arrived and reported the existence of some white people on the small island, and also that they had hoisted a flag with the name 'Pacific' worked on it.

Captain Osborn, hearing this, went to the master of the brig, and questioned him. He found the latitude and longitude of the island to be not far from that of the ship when she was deserted, and he was now convinced that, by some miracle, the Seagrave family had been preserved. He therefore went to the Governor of New South Wales, and made him acquainted with the facts which had been established, and the Governor instantly

Digitized by Google

replied, that the Government armed schooner was at his service, if he would himself go in quest of his former shipmates. Inconvenient as the absence at that time was to Captain Osborn, he at once acquiesced, and in a few days the schooner sailed for her destination. She arrived off the island on the same morning that the fleet of canoes with the savages effected their landing, and, when William made the remark to Ready as they were hastening into the stockade, that there was another vessel under sail off the garden point, had Ready had time to put his eye to the telescope, he would have discovered that it was the schooner, and not, as he supposed, a canoe which had separated from the others during the night.

The schooner stood in to the reefs, and then hauled off again, that she might send her boat in, to sound for an anchorage. The boat, when sounding, perceived the canoes and the savages, and afterwards heard the report of fire-arms on the first attack. On her return on board the schooner, they stated what they had seen and heard, and their idea that the white people on the island were being attacked by the savages. As the boat did not return on board till near dusk, they had not time to canvass the question, when the night attack was made, and they again heard the firing of the muskets. This made Captain Osborn most anxious to land as soon as possible, but as the savages were in such numbers, and the crew of the schooner did not consist of more than twenty-five men, the commander considered it was rash to make the attempt. He did, however, show the utmost anxiety to bring his schooner to an anchor, so as to protect his men, and then agreed that they should land.

The boat had reported deep water and good anchorage close to the garden point, and every preparation was made for running at daylight on the following morning; but unfortunately, it fell calm for the best part of the day, and it was not until the morning after, just as the savages were making their last attack upon the stockade, that she could get in. As soon as she did, she opened the fire of her carronades, and the result is already known; the savages fled in all directions, the boat was then manned, and Captain Osborn led the party who landed, and came so opportunely to their relief.

'That is Captain Osborn, I know,' said Ready in a faint

Digitized by Google

voice. 'You have come in good time, sir; I knew you would come, and I always said so: you have the thanks of a dying man.'

'I hope it is not so bad as that, Ready; we have a surgeon on board, and I will send for him at once.'

'No surgeon can help me, sir,' replied Ready; 'another hour of time will not pass before I shall be in Eternity. I thank God for the preservation of the family, but, Captain Osborn, my time is come.'

'We had better leave,' said Captain Osborn; 'he wishes not to be interrupted.'

Mr and Mrs Seagrave walked away with Captain Osborn, all of them much affected with the scene. William still remained by Ready's side to give him water when he asked for it. A few minutes afterwards, Ready opened his eyes.

'Are you there, William? I can't see you. Listen to me, my dear boy. Let me be buried under the trees on the mound above the well. I wish to lie there. Poor little Tommy; don't let him know that he was the cause of my death. Bring him here now, and Juno and Caroline, to say good-bye, William.'

William, with the tears rolling down his cheeks, hastened into the house, and communicated Ready's wish to his father and mother. They all went out in a body, to take a last farewell; Ready called them all by name, one after another. They knelt down as he called them, and kissed him. He bade them farewell in a faint voice, which at last was changed to a mere whisper. They still remained, in silence and in tears, standing round him, William only kneeling and holding his hand, when the old man's head fell back, and he was no more!

'It is all over,' said Mr Seagrave mournfully, 'and he has, I have no doubt, gone to receive the reward of a good and just man. "Happy are those who die in the Lord."'

William closed up the eyes, and Juno went and fetched the ship's ensign, which they laid over the body, after which they joined the rest of the party in the house.

During the time that William had remained with old Ready, the commander of the schooner had landed with another party of men, whom he despatched to scour the island in pursuit of any savages who might remain; but they could find none. Captain

Digitized by Google

Osborn introduced him to Mr and Mrs Seagrave, and arrangements were commenced for the embarkation. It was decided that the following day should be passed in packing up and getting on board their luggage, and that the day after the family should embark. William then mentioned the wish of poor old Ready, as to his burial. The commander immediately gave directions for a coffin to be made, and for his men to dig the grave at the spot that William should point out.

The boats were on shore early the next morning, and the luggage was taken on board; but Mr Seagrave would not take anything which could prove useful to any people who might be wrecked on the island; the furniture, tools, iron-work, nails, beef and pork, and flour, were all put into the house and locked up; the luggage therefore carried away was not very great, and was soon on board.

CHAPTER LXIV.

THE day following they waited for the arrival of Captain Osborn and the crew of the schooner to attend the funeral of poor old Ready. William, who had gone out occasionally to look at the vessel, now came in, and said that two boats were pulling on shore. A few minutes afterwards, Captain Osborn and the commander of the schooner made their appearance, and after a short conversation, they went out to give directions. The coffin had been brought on shore; the body of Ready was put into it, and it was screwed down. William attended the process, and the tears fell fast down his cheeks as the lid was put over, and he saw the last of his old friend.

In half an hour all was prepared, and the family were summoned from the house. It was arranged that William, Mr Seagrave, Captain Osborn, and Juno (at her own request) should be the pall-bearers.

The coffin, covered with the Union Jack as a pall, was raised on the shoulders of six of the seamen, and they bore it to the grave followed by Mrs Seagrave and the children, the commander of the schooner, and several of the men. Mr Seagrave read the

Digitized by Google

funeral service, which was occasionally interrupted by the sobbing of Juno, the grave was filled up, and they all walked back in silence. At the request of William, the commander of the schooner had ordered the carpenter to prepare an oak paling to put round the grave, and a board, on which was written the name of the deceased and day of his death. As soon as this had been fixed up William with a deep sigh followed the commander of the schooner to the house, to announce that all was finished, and that the boat waited for them to embark.

'Come, my dear,' said Mr Seagrave to his wife.

'I will, I will,' replied Mrs Seagrave, 'but I don't know how it is, now that the hour is come, I really feel such pain at quitting this dear island. Had it not been for poor Ready's death, I really do think I should wish to remain.'

'I don't doubt but that you feel sorrow, my dear; but we must not keep Captain Osborn waiting.'

'I should like to have time to visit once more all our little property,—the garden, the fish-pond, the turtle-pond; I should like to wish good-bye even to the animals, Seagrave; it may be a weakness, but I cannot help it.'

'Do we leave Nanny, mamma,' said Caroline, 'and all the chickens?'

'Yes, my dear; we leave all the goats and fowls for other people, if they come to the island.'

As Mr Seagrave was aware that the commander of the schooner was anxious to get clear of the islands before night, he now led his wife down to the boat. They all embarked and were soon on the deck of the schooner, from whence they continued to fix their eyes upon the island, while the men were heaving up the anchor. At last sail was made upon the vessel, the garden point was cleared, and as they ran away with a fair wind, each object on the shore became more indistinct. Still their eyes were turned in that direction. Juno and William stood abaft; William had the spy-glass, and was looking through it very steadily as the vessel ran on, when Captain Osborn inquired what he was looking at. 'I am taking my last farewell of Ready's grave,' replied William.

'He really a good man,' said Juno in a low voice.

As they ran down to the westward, they passed the cove where they had first landed, and Mr Seagrave directed Mrs Seagrave's

Digitized by Google

attention to it. Mrs Seagrave remained for some time looking at it in silence, and then said as she turned away—

'We shall never be more happy than we were on that island, Seagrave.'

'It will indeed be well, my dear, if we never are less happy,' replied her husband.

The schooner now ran fast through the water, and the island was every minute less distinct; after a time, the land was below the horizon, and the tops of the cocoa-nut trees only to be seen: these gradually disappeared. Juno watched on, and when at last nothing could be seen she waved her handkerchief in the direction of the island, as if to bid it farewell, and then went down below to hide her grief.

The wind continued fair, and, after a favourable passage of little more than four weeks, they arrived at Sydney Cove, the port to which they were bound when they embarked from England on board of the good ship 'Pacific.'

P. S.—As my young readers will probably wish to know a little more about the Seagrave family, I will inform them that Mr Seagrave, like the patriarch Job after his tribulation, found his flocks and herds greatly increased on his arrival at Sydney. The agent whom he had left in charge of his property had been diligent and honest, and although it was fully believed that the whole of the family had perished, and that the estates would go to distant heirs, still the delay of law proceedings, and the many months which it required to communicate with England, added to the want of positive knowledge of their loss, had not yet permitted the estates to pass away, and they were still in the hands of the executors. Mr and Mrs Seagrave lived to see all their children grown up. William inherited the greater part of the property from his father, after having for many years assisted him in the management of it. He married and had a numerous family. Tommy, notwithstanding all his scrapes, grew up a very fine fellow, and entered the army. He is now a major, and is said to retain his juvenile tastes so far, that, among his many arduous duties, he is still a very sedulous and efficient officer at the *Mess Table.* Caroline married a young clergyman, and made him an excellent

Digitized by Google

wife; little Albert went into the navy, and is at present a commander.

Mr and Mrs Seagrave are both dead, but poor Juno is still alive, and lives at Seagrave Plantation with William; and her greatest pleasure is to take his children on her knee, and tell them long stories about the island, and make them cry when she goes through the history of old Ready's death and burial.

And now, my dear children, having given you all the information that I possess, I have only to add, that I hope you like what I have written for you, and bid you heartily farewell.

THE END.

Digitized by Google

JOHN CHILDS AND SON, PRINTERS.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

BELL'S ILLUSTRATED SCHOOL BOOKS

For use in Elementary Schools. Royal 16mo, strongly bound.

SCHOOL PRIMER. Sixty-five Illustrations. 6*d.*

SCHOOL READER. By J. TILLEARD, Hon. Member of and Examiner to the College of Preceptors. Numerous Illustrations. 1*s.*

POETRY BOOK FOR SCHOOLS. Thirty-Seven Illustrations. 1*s.*

THE LIFE OF JOSEPH. Sixteen Illustrations. 1*s.*

THE SCRIPTURE PARABLES. Written in Simple Language by the Rev. J. E. CLARKE. Sixteen large Illustrations. 1*s.*

THE SCRIPTURE MIRACLES. Written in Simple Language by the Rev. J. E. CLARKE. Sixteen large Illustrations. 1*s.*

THE NEW TESTAMENT HISTORY. Written in Simple Language by the Rev. J. G. WOOD, M.A. With Sixteen large Illustrations. 1*s.*

THE OLD TESTAMENT HISTORY. Written in Simple Language by the Rev. J. G. WOOD, M.A. With Seventeen large Illustrations. 1*s.*

THE STORY OF BUNYAN'S PILGRIM'S PROGRESS. With Sixteen large Illustrations by Edward Wehnert. 1*s.*

LONDON: GEORGE BELL & SONS, YORK ST., COVENT GARDEN.

Digitized by Google

BOOKS FOR SCHOOLS.

FIRST NOTIONS OF GRAMMAR FOR YOUNG LEARNERS. By C. P. MASON, B.A., Fellow of University College, London. Fcap 8vo. Cloth, 8*d.*

FIRST STEPS IN ENGLISH GRAMMAR, for Junior Classes. Demy 18mo. *New edition, enlarged.* 1*s.*

OUTLINES OF ENGLISH GRAMMAR, for the use of Junior Classes. Cloth, 1*s.* 6*d.*

THE ELEMENTS OF THE ENGLISH LANGUAGE. By ERNEST ADAMS, Ph. D. *Thirteenth edition.* Post 8vo. 4*s.* 6*d.*

THE RUDIMENTS OF ENGLISH GRAMMAR AND ANALYSIS. *New edition, enlarged.* Fcap 8vo. 2*s.*

A FIRST BOOK OF GEOGRAPHY. By the Rev. C. A. JOHNS, B.A., F.L.S., Author of 'Botanical Rambles,' 'Flowers of the Field,' &c. Illustrated. 12mo. 2*s.* 6*d.*

THE ANIMAL KINGDOM. By Mrs LOUDON. *New edition.* Revised by W. S. Dallas, F.L.S. *With nearly* 500 *Engravings.* 6*s.*

THE CHURCH TEACHER'S MANUAL OF CHRISTIAN INSTRUCTION. Being the Church Catechism Expanded and Explained in Question and Answer, for the use of the Clergyman, Parent, and Teacher. By the Rev. M. F. SADLER, Rector of Honiton. *Third edition.* 2*s.* 6*d.*

TEST LESSONS IN DICTATION, for the First Class of Elementary Schools. This work consists of a series of extracts, carefully selected with reference to the wants of the more advanced pupils; they have been used successfully in many Elementary Schools. The book is supplementary to the exercises given in the 'Practical Hints on Teaching,' by the Rev. J. MENET, M.A. Cloth, 2*s.* 6*d.*; Paper, 2*s.*

PRACTICAL HINTS ON TEACHING. Containing Advice as to Organization, Discipline, Instruction, and Practical Management. By the Rev. JOHN MENET, M.A., Perpetual Curate of Hockerill, and late Chaplain of the Hockerill Training Institution. *Second edition.* Containing in addition Plans of Schools which have been thoroughly tested, and are now being adopted in various localities. Crown 8vo. Cloth, 2*s.* 6*d.*; paper cover, 2*s.*

LONDON: GEORGE BELL & SONS, YORK ST., COVENT GARDEN.

Digitized by Google

BOOKS ADAPTED FOR SCHOOL PRIZES.

GILES WITHERNE; or, the Reward of Disobedience. A Village Tale for the Young. By the Rev. J. P. PARKINSON, D.C.L. *Sixth edition.* Illustrated by the Rev. F. W. MANN. Super-royal 16mo. 1*s.*

POETRY BOOK FOR CHILDREN. With numerous Illustrations. Being the Poetry Book for Schools in neat cloth binding. Crown 8vo. 2*s.* 6*d.*

HEART MUSIC, for the Hearth-Ring; the Street-Walk; the Country-Stroll; the Work-Hours; the Rest-Day; the Trouble-Time. By the REV. J. ERSKINE CLARKE. *New edition.* 1*s.*

THE GIANT'S ARROWS. A Book for the Children of Working People. By the REV. J. ERSKINE CLARKE. 16mo. 6*d.*

LITTLE FOXES; or, the Little Failings that mar Domestic Happiness. By MRS H. BEECHER STOWE, Author of 'Uncle Tom's Cabin.' Fcap. Boards, 1*s.*; cloth, 1*s.* 6*d.*

"Wise words, wisely, quaintly, and racily spoken."—*Nonconformist.*

THE LIFE OF CHRISTOPHER COLUMBUS, in Short Words. By SARAH CROMPTON. With Frontispiece. Super-royal 16mo. 1*s.*

THE LIFE OF MARTIN LUTHER. By SARAH CROMPTON. Super-royal 16mo. 1*s.*

GLIMPSES INTO PET-LAND. By the REV. J. G. WOOD, M.A., F.L.S., &c. With Frontispiece by Crane. Fcap 8vo. 3*s.* 6*d.*

INSECT ARCHITECTURE. By JAMES RENNIE. Edited and Enlarged by the REV. J. G. WOOD, Author of 'Homes Without Hands.' Post 8vo. With nearly 200 Illustrations. 5*s.*

CAPTAIN MARRYAT'S BOOKS FOR BOYS,

UNIFORMLY BOUND IN BLUE CLOTH.

POOR JACK. With Sixteen Illustrations. *Twenty-second edition.* 8vo. 3*s.* 6*d.*

THE MISSION; OR, SCENES IN AFRICA. With Illustrations by John Gilbert. 3*s.* 6*d.*

THE SETTLERS IN CANADA. With Illustrations by Gilbert and Dalziel. 3*s.* 6*d.*

THE PRIVATEER'S MAN. Adventures by Sea and Land in Civil and Savage Life, One Hundred Years Ago. Illustrated with Eight Engravings. 3*s.* 6*d.*

MASTERMAN READY; or the Wreck of the Pacific. With Ninety-three Engravings on Wood. 3*s.* 6*d.*

THE PIRATE AND THE THREE CUTTERS. Illustrated with Twenty Engravings. With a Memoir of the Author. 3*s.* 6*d.*

LONDON: GEORGE BELL AND SONS, YORK ST., COVENT GARDEN.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google